

Change

by Splendidguy44

Category: How to Train Your Dragon

Genre: Adventure, Drama

Language: English

Characters: Astrid, Hiccup, OC, Toothless

Status: Completed

Published: 2014-08-04 01:28:09

Updated: 2014-12-07 11:08:45

Packaged: 2016-04-26 20:22:34

Rating: T

Chapters: 26

Words: 69,514

Publisher: www.fanfiction.net

Summary: Life so far for the new chief of Berk was going well. That is, until they discover a mysterious object on an abandoned ship.

What exactly is this object? Why is it so valuable? And why does a mysterious character and his friend want it so bad? Join Hiccup and his friends as they go on an adventure that will surely change their lives. (OC X OC, Possible Toothless X OC, Astrid X Hiccup)

1. Chapter 1

****Author's Note:****

****Please read and do not skip over this! It is important that you read this so that you won't get confused when I upload more chapters!****

****After many months of reading various fanfictions, I decided to sit down and actually write one out (If you don't believe me, check out my fav stories). Now, with that being said, do not beat me and roast me if it is not the perfect fanfiction alright. This fanfiction will incorporate characters from a different author, but this fic will still use characters from the movie (Serenity, Re, Aurora, Draco, and Tenor are not my characters but they belong to my favorite fanfiction author, Serenity Dragonrider. They will come into play later in the story). I will also use my own characters as well (So think of this as Game of Thrones where they incorporate a lot of characters). Dreamworks owns the rest of the HTTYD universe and its characters.****

****But DO NOT be discouraged from reading this fic! I will do my best to make it the best it can be. I have read stories where it had nothing but OCs and it was amazing! Feel free to review this chapter for good feedback and PM me for bad feedback! If you could do that, it'd be really appreciated! NOW LET'S DO THIS!****

****Italicized is dragon speech****

The sun was high in the sky. The waves of rocked gently against the cliffs of Berk. The atmosphere was cold and loud due to the fact that autumn was ending and all the vikings were preparing for the deadly winter storms they faced annually. This was going to be Hiccup's first real test as chief. From the looks of every Viking there, they had confidence their chief would do well. If he could defeat not 1, but 2 alphas, then this should be too easy for Hiccup Horrendous Haddock III, or so they thoughtâ€¦

Hiccup woke up with a groan. Ever since he became the chief of Berk, he hasn't been able to get a lot of sleep. He can't design inventions, map out new territories, go to sleep, and wake up from the tremors of his house cause by his best friend, Toothless the night fury, like he used to. Now, he usually has to get up right before the crack of dawn and go to sleep well after sunset.

"I just got to get through today, and tomorrow I can relax", Hiccup said with a sigh.

Even though Hiccup new that chiefs never take a day off, he decided to do things his way, as only stubborn Hiccup would. One day out of the week, he would go exploring with his best friend Toothless and chart new lands and discover new species of dragons. Some vikings thought that the idea was absurd, but the Viking gang (Astrid, Tuffnut, etc.) thought it was splendid. And who could ignore those big, puppy dog eyes of Toothless? Hiccup was just happy his off day was tomorrow.

"Well, I don't wanna be sleep-deprived tomorrow, so let's get started", he said to himself.

He got up and looked to his left and noticed that Toothless was not on his rock slab. "He's probably doing his chiefly duties, too", he thought out loud.

He put on his usual garments, and went downstairs to eat a quick breakfast. 15 minutes later, he approached his front door, took a deep breath, and stepped outside to begin another day as chief.

The village itself was even busier than usual now that Valka's rescued dragons moved in. But Hiccup was smart and lucky to have friends who would help him along the way. He left Valka and Fishlegs in charge of teaching the new generations on how to train a dragon. He put Snotlout and Eret as night patrolmen; watching Berk from the sky for any signs of trouble. Since the twins had a knack for explosions, they were left to help gather wood and fish every other day using Barf and Belch's gas and spark. In Astrid's case, Hiccup felt that she would be up for a slightly more challenging task. So what he did, was that he decided to make her his second-in-command. You could imagine her reaction: her screaming with joy, along with a firm punch to Hiccup's shoulder, followed by a strong, slightly overwhelming kiss.

As chief Hiccup had to check up on the gang as usual. Everybody was doing the jobs accordingly, much to the chief's relief. The only one who he was worried about was Astrid, since he could not find her in the village. Valka, his mother, stated that Astrid went with the twins to make sure they didn't burn all the fish as they did the other day.

He then found Toothless walking with Cloudjumper, conversing in their own tongue.

"_Man, dragons have so many problems I didn't even know about. I don't know if I can handle them all", _groaned Toothless.

"_You can", _consoled Cloudjumper, "_All you have to do is make sure they learn from their mistakes and your job as alpha will get way easier, trust me"_

"_Thanks Cloudjumper, you really are a helpful friend"_

"_Anytime. If I could help the Bewilderbeast with his duties back in my old nest, I can sure as heck help you with yours", _reassured Cloudjumper.

Just then Hiccup came up to them. "Hey bud, mind if I join in with you guys?", Hiccup questioned happily. Toothless warbled in agreement, and lowered himself down so Hiccup could get on his back. The rest of the day was spent settling dragon disputes. By the time they were done with that, the sun was setting on the horizon.

"Wow, today wasn't as bad as I thought it would be", said Hiccup. Just then Astrid returned with the twins.

"Hello milady, I'm sure your day was as exciting as ever", Hiccup greeted with his usual sarcasm, followed by a quick peck on the cheek.

"Trust me Hiccup, watching Gobber's dragon, Grump, sleep all day would've been more entertaining", countered Astrid.

"Hey Astrid, not trying to ruin the mood or anything, but aren't you going to tell Hiccup, uh, what we found today?", questioned Ruffnut.

"I think we should have destroyed it but Astrid said not to", pouted Tuffnut. "Wow, my idiot of a brother can actually think out complete thoughts!", teased Ruffnut.

As the twins started to fight atop their dragon, Hiccup sighed in annoyance, "What are they talking about?".

"They are talking about this", Astrid said as she handed Hiccup a black, cylindrical tube, "We found it on an abandoned, sinking ship. We looked for survivors, but there weren't any to be found".

"Was there anything else on that ship?", asked Hiccup.

"Aside from scattered weapons, no. It looked like all they were carrying of value was that thing", Astrid replied, gesturing to the tube.

Hiccup inspected it more closely. The tube had curves and indentions that looked like weird markings all over the tube. The ends had silver knobs on them with a sliver of gold that connected the knobs to the cylinder itself. Even Toothless sniffed it curiously, wondering what it was.

"Let's take this back to the Mead Hall and gather the gang. This is something I want only us and our dragons to know about", he ordered the Astrid.

"You got it, Hiccup", Astrid said. She then took off with Stormfly and the twins to gather their friends while Hiccup took off towards the Mead Hall on the back of Toothless.

Once everybody was gathered, the moon was rising towards the sky. The whole gang, except for Astrid, Hiccup, the twins, and their respective dragons, were wondering why their chief gathered them at this time of day.

"Now, you are all probably wondering why I gathered you all here", stated Hiccup.

"Eh, no worries chief. Snotlout and I were gonna wake up for our night patrol anyways," Eret said in his thick british accent, brushing it off.

"The Ruffnut, Tuffnut, and Astrid discovered this", Hiccup said while placing the tube in the middle of the table for all to see, "on an abandoned boat while helping the fishermen out at sea. Now, we don't know what this thing is, so that's why I asked all of you to come here".

"So we can find out what it is, and why it was on that ship", finished Astrid.

Valka picked it up delicately, and inspected it from all angles. "Whatever this is", Valka stated, "It is pretty important, seeing as how there are many markings and drawings of some sort.

"It 'looks 'like it's made o' some fancy metal", Gobber chimed in.

Valka then put it next to her ear, and shook it. Her eyes widened in surprise, "There is something in here!", she exclaimed.

"Let me see it", asked Eret, holding out his hand. Valka gave the tube to Eret, who then went on to opening one end and failing to do so.

" .You !", shouted Eret with all his might. He gave up shortly after. "Whatever this thing is, it can't open", voiced Eret while waving the tube in the air.

"Give me that!", barked Snotlout as he snatched the tube from his hands, "You're not doing it right". He then proceeded to pry open the container with no luck.

"Uh, men", voiced Astrid. She then ripped the cannister from Snoutlout's hands, put half of it on the edge of a table with her foot holding it in place, and with one heavy swing from her axe sliced one of the knobs off. She handed the tube to Hiccup while Snotlout grumbled, "...well I could've done that, too".

Hiccup poured out the contents into his hand, which happened to be a scroll. He unrolled it onto the table and scanned his eyes over it. "It's a map", he announced.

While everybody was looking over the map, the dragons couldn't help but have their own conversation about the topic of interest.

"_Why would a Viking carry only a map and nothing else?"_, Meatlug questioned confusedly.

"_I don't know"_, Barf stated. "_Humans are something else"_, finished Belch.

Stormfly, on the other hand, was trying to put the pieces together, "_An abandoned, sinking ship, no crew whatsoever, and only one item on that ship. This doesn't make any sense"._

"_I think I figured it out"_, Toothless stated, "_This map is important to somebody out there in the world. And from what I heard, it looked like the crew of that ship were on their way to delivering it and gave their lives to try and protect this thing."_

It seemed Astrid was thinking the same thing, "I think whoever was aboard that ship gave their lives to make sure this thing wouldn't fall into the wrong hands. That map, is important"

"It's a shame that it is not written in runes, or else we could've found some treasure", spoke Snotlout.

"Regardless of what it is, we are going to hold it until the owner claims it", declared Hiccup.

"How would we know if the one who claims it is the right owner?", questioned his mother.

"We will ask them questions about this map, the container it was in, etc. The bottom line, is that they won't be lying to us", replied Hiccup.

"How can you be so sure?"

"Would you lie to a dragon?"

Everyone couldn't argue against that, so with that, the meeting was over and everybody, dragons included, turned in for the night. All except Snotlout and Eret, who had started their night watch. Their main priority was to watch the sea for any invaders, since they were aware that Berk was the only place that made peace with dragons, so they didn't need to look up, only down. That was the first mistake. Hiccup kept the map and its container with him at his house. That was the second everybody wasn't aware of, was that they were being observed the whole time. In fact, they were being watched the moment Astrid and the twins picked up the map.

High up in the sky near the clouds was a good sized group of dragons, about 20 in total, gazing down at Berk and waiting patiently for their commander to give them the signal. At the head of the pack was their leader, the alpha of their nest. A female alpha to be precise. In fact, she was a rare breed of dragon; she was a night fury. This night fury was not like the few others of her breed. She was the 2nd of her kind to have a rider atop her back. Her rider waited until the night watchmen were a good distance away, and everybody else was sound asleep before he rider, covered in black, gave his mount the

order,"Retrieve the map, and do not shed any blood", he said firmly. The night fury, nodded in compliance, relayed the order to the rest of the pack, and not even 5 seconds later, the bone-chilling whistle of a night fury's dive, filled the night sky, followed by the diving bodies of 19 dragons.

2. Chapter 2

****Well thank you to all who liked my story so far. You guys, really thank you, I honestly didn't expect anyone to give a damn. Even if this story has 2 favorites, and 2 follows and I am the favorite author of 2 people, I will not abandon this story for you guys!****

****As of right now, my deepest appreciation goes to Black Thorn Angel, Notlobe, and Saphirabrightscale! Thank you :)****

****PLEASE, if you can, review. tell me what you think. And I'm sorry for any mistakes I made. ****

All was quiet in the village of Berk. None knew of the danger lurking above them.

Toothless was sleeping peacefully when he awoke to the sound of something that completely shocked him. It was the whistle of a night fury. Another night fury! "_But wait", _Toothless thought_, "Why would a night fury-". He didn't have time to finish his thought as the boom of an explosion sounded nearby.

Hiccup woke up with a startle. "What in Thor's name, are we being attacked?!", Hiccup screeched as he furiously fumbled to put on his clothes and prosthetic. Toothless desperately tried to explain, in growls of course, what that explosion was, but to no avail. He followed Hiccup out of the house to see the sky full of various dragons, and the color of the dancing flames on different buildings.

Astrid came up to them, running like a crazed woman. "Hiccup, what is happening?! are we being raided? BY DRAGONS!?", she yelled deliriously.

"Whatever this is, we need to stop this now!", ordered Hiccup as he mounted Toothless. "I want you, my mom, and the rest of the gang to help me break up the dragon fights. I want everyone else to put out the fires. I want no dragons AND vikings coming out of this harmed!".

"All right. Be safe", worried Astrid as she gave him a quick peck on his cheek. Hiccup shot her a smile before he took off.

"Alright bud, let's see what we are up against", Hiccup told Toothless as he observed the skies. What he saw, was something out of the ordinary. He saw dragons he had never seen before. He only recognized 2 dragons: a nadder and a gronkle. What he could deduce from his observations, was that these reptiles moved, as if in a pattern. 4-6 dragons would land and crawl around on the ground randomly, as if searching for something, while the the rest of their group would draw the attention away from them. The dragons on the ground stayed away from the Vikings as much as they could and if they

were spotted, they would fly back up to the group and swap positions with an airborne dragon. But how could a dragon cause attention? The answer, destruction by fire, the only way they knew how.

The Dragons of Berk weren't just gonna sit there and let this happen.

"_What are our brothers and sisters doing attacking this village!?",_ screamed out Stormfly.

"_There is no queen around for miles. They have no reason to raid Berk?",_ reasoned Barf.

"_Well we aren't just gonna stand here and do nothing! Everyone, meet up with your riders!",_ ordered Cloudjumper, "_then we will await for what Toothless' orders"._

The riders' dragons all nodded their heads frantically as they searched for their respective riders.

As they all got up into the air, Toothless shot by and barked at them, "Stop the invading dragons. We outnumber them, so ground as many as you can!". Everyone roared in agreement as they sought to defeat the new dragons. As they came to find out, these dragons were a force to be reckoned with. What they lacked in numbers, they made up for in strength. As Hookfang and Snotlout approached a yellow dragon, it looked like the dragon didn't know what was coming for him, until at the last possible second, it turned around and grabbed Hookfang's neck with its front paws, let gravity pull him down, and flipped Hookfang out of the sky, with Snotlout being flung off of his saddle. Luckily Fishlegs and Meatlug were there to catch him.

"Thanks", spoke Snotlout uneasily. "No problem", replied Fishlegs. "As long as I avoid these dragons I-AAHHH!", yelled Fishlegs. He didn't have enough time to reply as a black and brown, scale-armored dragon came out of nowhere, wrap itself up in a ball and crash right into Meatlug. The force was strong enough to knock her to the ground unconscious.

As Toothless was throwing out plasma blasts carefully (as he had a 6-shot limit), he scanned the black sky for that mysterious night fury. "_Now where are you?",_ he wondered.

His question was answered as the night fury's whistle was heard, followed by the purple explosion of a thankfully empty building. "Another night fury!?", Hiccup gasped. He didn't have to tell Toothless what to do next, they both knew that they had to chase after that Night Fury. That night fury was fast, but Toothless was able to keep up behind her. Just as he was about to catch up to her, she immediately opened up her wings, slowing her down, and took off in the other direction. Hiccup and Toothless barely had time to get out of her way. Once they recovered, she was out of sight.

"What the-? Where did she go?", Hiccup questioned.

"_I, do not know either",_ voiced Toothless, eyeing his surroundings suspiciously.

As if to answer Hiccup's question, a plasma blast hit Toothless right in the face, temporarily blinding Toothless and knocking Hiccup off

the saddle. Toothless landed with a thud, while Hiccup glided down using his flightsuit. "Bud, are you alright?" squeaked Hiccup with concern. Toothless cooed in affirmation. Hiccup quickly got back on him. "For now, let's help the others. If we stop a majority of them, this night fury is bound to show up eventually". Toothless couldn't agree more and roared his agreement.

Even though these dragons were strong and crafty, they still were outmatched by Berk's numbers. For every invading dragon, there was at least 7-8 Berk dragons, and that's not including the vikings! Pretty soon, a majority of these dragons were either pinned to the ground or were being chased by a couple of Berk's reptilian residents. It looked like it was all over, that is, until the new night fury dropped from the sky, glowing blue!

All the dragons and Berk's residents were shocked by this, as they thought Toothless was the only one who was able to do that. "_Get up and activate your titan wing NOW!_", commanded the night fury to the rest of her pack.

Soon after that, the attacking dragons began to..change. All of them took on a new form, so to speak. The scale-armored, black and brown dragon inversed its colors and its armored plates grew bigger. The yellow dragon grew silver streaks upon its back and his tail grew horizontal spikes. The nadder, who was purple normally, had the lower part of her back turn a bronze color and the spikes on her tail curled around her tail. The gronkle turned into a solid jet-black color, with red orange cracks running all over its body. It looked like the dragon was literally made of lava! Soon after all of the dragons turned into their titan form, they all roared and shrieked in retaliation and broke free of their captors with ease. Berk's dragons tried to pin them down again, but the invading dragons easily stopped them from doing so. The 1:7 ratio didn't mean anything at this point. Berk was now the side that was unmatched.

"Defensive wall!", yelled the female night fury. Her pack did as they were told and instead of engaging the defending dragons, instead made a ring around their airborne and Toothless flew up to the night fury as fast as they could, hoping to stop her. The female night fury had something different in mind. As soon as Hiccup and Toothless were in range, she did a quick front flip in mid-air, slapping Toothless on the head with her tail, and sending the duo spiraling down. Hiccup was again thrown off the saddle as they hit the ground. Hard. The female took that time to dive down and pin Toothless to the ground with her weight. She then placed a claw on the struggling Toothless who immediately went still when he felt something sharp placed against his throat.

"_Stop fighting, you will only make it worse"_ , she said to the male below her.

"_Fighting? You and your group were the ones who started the fight in the first place!_", boiled out Toothless in anger.

"_Well maybe if you hadn't took something that belonged to us, we probably wouldn't be in this situation", _retorted the female.

"_Wait, that map thing was yours?", _asked Toothless incredulously.

"_Let's just say, we can't let that thing fall into the wrong paws",_ the female replied

"_Look who's talking", _Toothless hissed.

Before she could respond, Hiccup called out, "Wait, whatever you do, please don't hurt him!"

She glanced at Hiccup before turning back to Toothless, "_That viking really cares about you, doesn't he?"_, she asked knowingly.

"_Yes, and if you so much as lay a claw on him-"_, Toothless threatened.

"_You aren't in a position to do anything at the moment"_, she chuckled amused.

"Don't worry, she wouldn't kill dragon unless that dragon was a threat. Let alone a dragon of her own species", came a mysterious new voice.

Everybody turned, dragons included, at the sound of the new voice. The owner of that voice a tall, young man. Maybe a year or 2 older than Hiccup was. He had short black hair, big ears, tan skin, and had a strong, yet lean body frame. He wore black pants with black boots that had thick fur lining the top of his footwear. Accompanying his waist was two twin swords strapped to his left side. On his torso, was a dark colored shirt, which was covered by a slim winter trench coat with thick fur accompanying the ends of the sleeves.

"Were you the one who organized this raid?", asked Hiccup warily.

"Well, I can't take all the credit. My dragon, Windwalker, here did the grunt work. If it wasn't for her and her group, this encounter wouldn't have been successful on my part", he replied, gesturing to the female night fury.

Hiccup looked at her, then at him with wide eyes, "Are you telling me, you are a dragon rider, too?".

"Well, it sure beats staying on the ground, I can tell you that much.", he casually responded.

Hiccup didn't like the tone of this guy's voice. Why would an invader have such a friendly disposition? What was he hiding? "Look whatever it is you want we don't-", Hiccup started.

"Don't lie to me. You have something of value. Something that might look like, oh I don't know, this", he declared showing everyone the map.

"That's-"

"What? Not mine?", the mysterious person interrupted, "How about this, I will make you a deal. You let me and my dragons go free, with nobody following us, and Windwalker here won't slay your dragon". As he said that, Windwalker pressed her claw harder on Toothless' throat to emphasize the seriousness of the deal. "You may think that you can

somehow stop us from leaving and save your night fury, but I assure you, after what you have seen my dragons do, we are more than capable of fighting our way out of here, if need be."

"You can't be serious", Hiccup exasperated, "Toothless could be that last male dragon of the night fury species!"

The mystery man chuckled, " Don't worry, I can assure you that there are other night furies, both male and female, out there in the world. Now, I don't know about you, but I don't want to see any blood being shed today. But, if I must-".

"No! Ok, fine. Nobody from my village will follow you after your departure. Just, why is this may so important, that you would kill my dragon, a night fury for it?", Hiccup pleaded.

"If this falls into the wrong hands, unspeakable things will happen to me, you, everybody. Dragons included. This map holds the key to the future of both of our races", he said as he signaled Windwalker. She got off of Toothless and made her way over to her rider so that he could mount him. " And I intend to make sure, everybody lives to see another day". And with that, he clicked the reins on Windwalker's saddle and hovered in the air. Soon, he was joined by all the other invading dragons. "Oh, thanks for your cooperation. I'm sorry it had to be this way", he called out to Hiccup. Then he did something that caught the attention of everyone; he spoke in a language the vikings of Berk hadn't heard in a while. He spoke Dragonese; the language of the dragons.

"_Let's move, we have no time to waste", _he spoke to Windwalker.

"_You got it, Chris",_ responded Windwalker. She then relayed the command to the rest of her pact and in less than a moment's noticed, they disappeared into the dark night sky.

3. Chapter 3

Hiccup and the rest of his village watched the mystery man, his dragon, and the rest of the pact fly off into the darkness. After they were no longer able to be seen, all the vikings turned to their chief, Hiccup, for answers.

"Who was that, Hiccup?!"

"Why would dragons attack this village if we have already made peace with them, hiccup?!"

"What was that thing he had in his hand, Hiccup-why is it so important?"

"Why did you hid that thing from us, Hiccup?"

All the villagers were asking all their questions at once and were overwhelming their chief. His voice was drowned out by their shouts. Toothless roared as loud as he could, effectively silencing all the vikings of Berk. "Thank you,bud", he breathed out,relieved. Toothless groaned in response.

"Now, I know what you just witness was...crazy", started hiccup

"Yeah, we just got raided by dragons!", responded an angry villager.

"We do not know that they took our fish and wood supplies-".

"Oh, like that helps the situation", retorted another villager.

"Look!", shouted Hiccup, "Yes, dragons attacked us. But, didn't you hear what the guy said? All he want was that map. That's all he came for; that was the only reason he came to Berk. He won't come back since he has what he reason I didn't tell you guys about this was because we barely found it earlier today. It was found on an abandoned ship. We just figured that the person who wanted the map would figure out, that we were the only habitable island within 50 miles of here, so they would come here asking if we found a map within our waters. We would then, give them the map, and they would be on their merry way! No trouble,WHATSOEVER!" I didn't know that this guy would have a FREAKING DRAGON ATTACK GROUP WITH HIM AND ATTACK US ON SIGHT!

The whole village was silent. They didn't expect Hiccup, the talking fishbone he once was, to snap at them and have a firm grasp on the situation at hand. They were surprised, in a good way. He sure was the son of Stoick!

"Now, I would really appreciate it, if you guys can work together and help me sum up the damage of our village, so that we could go to sleep sooner!", he ordered.

And the village did just that. Both dragons and vikings were working harmoniously together, sizing up the damage to the village, which shockingly wasn't much. It seemed like this mystery man just wanted the scroll, and the scroll only. After he ordered the village to start the repairs to all the damaged buildings, he asked Astrid to do a special task for him.

"I'm sorry, you want me to what?", Astrid asked.

"I need you to go to Draconia and get Re, Aurora, Tenor, and Serenity to come to Berk immediately", Hiccup repeated.

"Hiccup, are-are you sure? I'm sure they have their own problems to deal with. Should we bother them with ours?", Astrid doubtfully questioned.

"They will always be our allies. They will never let us down. They are our friends. I'm positive they won't mind", reassured Hiccup.

"I don't even know how to get there", countered Astrid.

"Like Re and Aurora said, only dragons know how to get there. Now if I were you, I would leave right now so that you can come back here by tomorrow night. I have a plan, and it requires them to do it."

"You are just too stubborn to leave it alone, aren't you?", inquired Astrid defeatedly, already knowing what Hiccup was up to.

"Yes milady", Hiccup confirmed with a quick kiss, "Now go".

With a slight nod, Astrid took to the sky on the back of Stormfly, headed for the dragons' homeland. "Come on Stormfly. We are gonna visit the king and queen of Draconia. Do you mind if you can show me the way?", questioned Astrid. Stormfly's eyes went wide at the mention of Draconia. she was more than happy to show her rider her homeland, and be the first on Berk to see it(her vanity speaking of course).

Now, Draconia is a beautiful land. It is the homeland to all the dragons that roam this Earth. On that land mass is a castle,carved out of a castle-shaped mountain. It started out as a series of deep caves. As Draconia developed the caves became rooms made of marble, gold, and cement. The biggest room in the castle is the great hall. The castle is 1,000 ft high and has over 300 rooms. On one side of the castle is the capital city, Bluegreen, on the other side is a vast cove known as Castle Cove with its own small harbor, known as Royal Town. Castle Cove is sealed by a 2 mile long wall. The golden castle gates are in the very center of the wall. The king and queen of Draconia are Re and Aurora respectively. Tenor is the prime minister of Draconia (Every kingdom needs a government,yeesh).

Those three dragons are a bit different than the dragons from Berk. They had long, thick necks, long tails, large wings, and one pair of horns on the back of their narrow heads. Re, a green dragon and Aurora, a blue dragon, had the bodies and legs of large wolves; Tenor the black dragon, had the body and legs of a panther. Re and Aurora were the size of Clydesdale Horses while Tenor was the size of an Arabian Horse. They each wore armor in the color and design of their choice, with their own personal crest on their head plates: Re's was a green dragon with his wings open and held a golden apple in one talon and a golden music note in the other, it was surrounded by a blue circle; that crest was the crest of the country he ruled over. Aurora's crest was a huge snowflake made out of sapphire and turquoise stones that matched her scales. Tenor's crest was a silver crescent moon surrounded by silver stars.

Re and Aurora were Whippertails, meaning the last third of their tails had no bone, just solid muscle. They could be used to grab stuff and are thin enough to be used as whips. Aurora was the daughter of the Dragon God, Draco. With that being said, she was born with magic and can do countless things with it,except raise the dead and create life like her father could , on the other hand, was the most unusual dragon. Part of him was a Blackfang, meaning his teeth were pitch black and so venomous, they could kill anything in an instant. In addition to that, he had the skin, eyes, wings, tail, sonar flaps (instead of horns), and spines of a Night Fury. Tenor had been abandoned as an egg, and grew up with Re and Aurora, who were quite positive that he was the only Night Fury hybrid in existence.

Serenity is a young woman who was kicked out of her family at the age of 5 for being friends with a red dragon named Ruby. Ruby then decided to bring her to Draconia where he thought she would be safe. The dragons took her in, and did something that has never been attempted with any other human being ever. They turned her into the first human dragon in history. She is a dragon rider and dragon healer. She travels the world to learn about the dragons outside of

Draconia, before Re called her in and asked her to come back home. She helps out any dragon who is sick or injured, so she is well-known amongst the dragons. She lives in the castle with the royal dragons.

Little did they know that in just a day's time, they will receive news that will completely change their lives for better, or for worse.

****I know, you must hate me for not progressing the story and that it is a short chapter. I'm sorry but I had to get in some backstory of the characters I'm going to introduce you all to in chapter 4. All the characters mentioned will be essential to the rest of the story. All I can ask of you is to not give up on this story. I WILL NOT be like those other authors who give up on their stories. And another thing, I will ALWAYS post a new chapter no later than a week. So at my best, I will upload 2-4 chapters a week, at my worst, 1 chapter a week.****

4. Chapter 4

The sun was high in the was content in the lands of Draconia; they haven't had a problem in quite a while. Everything was peaceful, and Serenity and the royal dragons loved it.

Serenity sighed. She was merely looking out the window, looking out over Bluegreen and out towards the sea. Suddenly there was a knock on her door. She didn't glance back to see who it was as she lazily said, "Come in".

She knew that the only dragons who ever really visited her were Re, Aurora and Tenor. They were her family. They all came in leisurely, wearing their respective armors and their respective saddles. (Their armor had saddles built in them, in case they ever needed to give Serenity, or any other dragon rider, a lift).

"_How are you Serenity?"_, asked Re, "_you have been quiet these past few days"_. It was then that Serenity turned to her dragon companions, "Oh, nothing has really been bothering me recently. I guess I am just enjoying the..quiet", Serenity replied.

"_You... guess?"_, Aurora responded.

"Well, not exactly".

"_Serenity, you can tell us anything, you know that, right?"_, soothed Tenor.

"Do you guys honestly want to know?", she sighed defeatedly. All the dragons in that room nodded their heads eagerly. "I'm-I'm thinking about him", she stuttered out.

"_You are gonna have to be more specific about that"_, replied Re, although he had a clue as to whom she was referring to. That thought alone made him sad.

"_You mean-?"_, voiced Aurora solemnly. She wasn't capable of finishing her sentence at this point.

"It's been 10 years, and sometimes I feel like it happened just yesterday," Serenity breathed out shakily.

Re hanged his head low in shame. " _It's all my fault anyway. If I had just-"_, he didn't finish his sentence. He didn't need to. He was practically on the verge of tears.

Aurora wrapped a wing around her mate. "_Hey, it is not your fault. You can't search the entire ocean. It is impossible. You gave it your best okay? No one blames you and I still love you nonetheless. And no one in our kingdom has lost respect for you because of that"_, consoled Aurora.

Re looked at his queen sadly. He then nuzzled her affectionately. "_I won't lose anymore loved ones. Not anymore. Not on my watch"_, Re said strongly.

"_And we will all help you"_, confirmed Tenor.

Re looked around at the people in Serenity's room, "_Thank you. Thank you all"_, he replied with gratitude.

At that point, Serenity happened to glance out the window and spotted a speck flying past the Golden Gates. "It looks like we have a visitor", she informed the group. They all looked at each other and nodded their heads in silent agreement. Serenity put on her gear, mounted Aurora, and they all took off into the sky to confront this stranger.

As they all got closer, they were all surprised to see that it was Stormfly and Astrid. "Hey!", greeted Serenity, "What brings you to land of Draconia?".

"Can we land?", Astrid strenuously asked, "It took us all night just to get here".

"Sure", Serenity gestured to a nearby pavilion where they all gracefully landed, except for Stormfly.

"_Are you okay?"_, questioned Tenor.

"_Yeah...just needâ€|a breather.."_, huffed Stormfly.

"_So, like Serenity said, what brings you to the homeland of the dragons? Do you come to see the sights?"_, implored Re. Unlike the rest of the dragons, he, Aurora, Tenor, and the dragon god Draco, were the only dragons who understand Norse, the language of the Vikings.

"As beautiful and magnificent as this place is, I actually came here to ask for your help", Astrid declared.

Everyone's faces turned serious after hearing that. "_What happened?"_, questioned Aurora.

"We,we-uh, well, I mean the village is in trouble. We got,um, raided by dragons", Astrid elaborated. She was having trouble conveying the message because she didn't believe the dragons would take her seriously.

The dragons all looked shocked at the news they'd just received.
"_I'm sorry, but what?"_, Re asked incredulously.

"A group of about 20 dragons or so sneak attacked our village last night. They came in search of a map we found on an abandoned boat in our waters yesterday. What was weird was that, even though we outnumbered them, they held their own, and I hate to say it, but they could've defeated us if they wanted to. Theyâ€¦changed mid-battle. They changed their form somehow. I don't know what it was, but they got like a power boost or something, because we had them pinned down, but once they transformed, they got the upper hand."

"_Changed?...Oh you mean the titan wing? Waitâ€¦..they ALL ACTIVATED THEIR TITAN?!"_, Re replied back dubiously.

"Well whatever it was, like I said, they handed our butts to us. But that's not all, they had a night fury with them, a female night fury."

At that comment, everybody's jaw dropped. "A FEMALE NIGHT FURY!?", Serenity squealed.

"...and she also had a rider", Astrid added on.

Everybody's minds were working overtime to process all the information.

"_I'm sorry Astrid, but your story is just getting harder and harder to believe"_, commented Tenor.

"_It's all true"_, squawked Stormfly.

"_She can't be lying Tenor, she wouldn't have flown all the way over here just to lie to us. If Hiccup wants our help, then by the grace of Draco, we are gonna help him and his village"_, declared Re,

"_Pack some stuff Serenity, it looks like we are gonna go on a journey"_. Serenity nodded, clicked the reigns on Aurora's saddle, and took off toward her room.

Re turned back towards Astrid, "_What can you tell me about this Night Fury and her rider?"_, asked Re.

"Well, the guy was a tall, young man. Maybe a year or 2 older than me. He had short black hair, tan skin, and had a strong, yet lean body frame. Big ears, too. Accompanying his waist was two swords on his left side. He wore black pants with black boots that had thick fur lining the top of his torso, was a dark colored shirt, which was covered by a slim winter trench coat with thick fur on the ends of the sleeves. He had brown eyes as well. What was freaky, was that he could speak the language of the dragons, like Serenity could. The Night Fury pretty much looked like a Night Fury, except she had honey, yellow eyes, is the leader of the group of dragons, and goes by the name Windwalker."

As Astrid was describing the young man, something clicked in Re's head. 'It can't be. He died, didn't he?', Re thought in his mind. A torrent of emotions and ideas started to flood his head. As he tried to sort them out, he didn't notice that Serenity and Aurora had

returned.

"_Re, Reâ€¦|..RE!"_, shouted Aurora.

"_What? Oh, you guys are ready?"_, he asked surprisingly.

"_Yes. What's the matter? We were ready a few minutes ago. You had a blank expression on your face. Were you lost in thought?"_,Aurora ask.

"_I-I, think, I don't know what to think"_, was all the Re said after that.

"Wait, I'm confused?", said Serenity puzzled. "_Astrid will fill you in on the way back"_,Re declared. He then turned to Stormfly,"_Do you have enough strength to fly?"_

"_Yes, my king"_, Stormfly stated respectfully.

As they all took off in the direction of Berk, Astrid filled in Tenor, Aurora, and Serenity on the description of the mystery man and his dragon Windwalker. The Draconians and Serenity had looks of bewilderment etched across their features. They flew in silence from then on out. They were all tense, comprehending the crisis on Berk. Astrid was worried about Hiccup, the village, and the mysterious man who somehow was also a dragon rider. What she didn't know was that the Draconians and Serenity were worried about the same thing, except for the last reason. They didn't need to worry over who the mystery man was, they all knew who the mystery man was. This mystery man sounded a whole lot like the loved one they missed so much. The one who Re could not save. Astrid's description described their fallen loved one perfectly. Yes, it sounded like a longshot, that this mystery man was the one they lost so long ago, but their guts told them that he had to be him. To them, it wasn't a mere coincidence that a lone, black haired man could show up on the back of a dragon, let alone speak the language of the dragons. For you see, the Draconians have only taught 2 humans, in the history of dragons, their language. The first was not Serenity, as many have come to believe. No, she was the second. The 1st human to ever know the dragons' language was the adopted human son of Aurora and Re. His name was Chris.

5. Chapter 5

It has been 2 days since Astrid left, and Hiccup was starting to get worried. The sun was setting;letting the citizens of Berk know that they day was coming to an end. It took the village less than a day to rebuild the town to it's former glory.

Hiccup was near one of the cliffs of Berk, looking out towards the sky, hoping that his girlfriend would be coming home soon. Toothless was by his side, snoozing since he had nothing else to do.

"She 'hould be returning this evening, 'iccup. She 'ill be fine", consoled Gobber as he approached Hiccup from behind.

Both Hiccup and Toothless turned around at the new voice.

Hiccup sighed,"I know, it's just that, you can't stop a guy from

worrying,you know?". Toothless looked at Gobber lazily and went back to sleep.

"So, 'iccup. I see you 'ike Astridâ€|", Gobber started.

"I doâ€| why do you ask?", Hiccup replied suspiciously.

"Well, I was 'ust wonderin' an all. I mean, you are the chief of Berk. You're twenty. She's twenty. She 'ikes you. I was 'ust curious as to when-

Hiccup's eyes bulged out at what Gobber was hinting at,"Whoa, whoa, whoa! Gobber, I just became chief recently. I don't think I am ready for ANOTHER big step in my life just yet."

"Hiccup, vikings for generations have been 'etting married at the age of fifteen or younger!", Gobber retorted.

"Look, we are facing a potential danger here. I can't have this, plus wedding plans on my mind right now. I am sure Astrid wants to enjoy some of her life before she has to settle down. I know I want to, with what little time I have to begin with anyway. But", Hiccup looked around, "I do plan to marry her, just not right now, okay?", Hiccup whispered, hoping Gobber would get off his case.

A smirk appeared on Gobber's face just then, "Righty then, my lips are tighter 'han Grump's eyes when he's sleeping, which is 'ike all the time".

"Yeah, I know Gobber", Hiccup stated annoyed.

Just then, they heard a triumphant roar from the sky,which startled Toothless from his slumber.. They turned to see Tenor, Aurora, Re, Serenity, Stormfly, and Astrid descending from the clouds. The royal dragons were wearing their armor, as usual. Hiccup waved them down to land. All of the dragons landed gracefully,except Stormfly, who was beyond tired.

Toothless ran up to Stormfly concerned,"_You are tired. I want you to go to the feeding tray, feed yourself, then go to your pen and sleep"_, he ordered as Astrid dismounted.

"_Toothless...I am okay, I just need-"_

"_Your body tells me otherwise. You need rest now! I am not telling you again. Go"_, Toothless declared.

Stormfly exhaustedly nodded her head and went off.

"_Well, it looks like you are doing swell as an alpha"_, Re smiled.

"_An alpha protects them all, he looks out for all the dragons"_, Toothless replied with heart.

"I told you he would make a good alpha", Serenity stated as she jumped off Re and proceeded to scratch Toothless around the neck area, "I missed you".

"_And I, you"_, Toothless groaned in pleasure.

"_So, you need our help, correct?_", Aurora questioned.

"Yes, and now that you are all here, we should talk about this behind closed doors, we are all waiting for you in the Meade hall", Hiccup replied.

With that said, Astrid got behind Hiccup on the back of Toothless, Serenity got back on Re, and they all took off. Except for Gobber, who had to go and wake up Grump, who was knocked out in the forge.

The rest of the gang were hanging out in the Meade hall like Hiccup had instructed them to. Just then the doors to the Meade Hall flew open, and in came Hiccup, Astrid, Toothless, Serenity, and the royal dragons. A few seconds later, they were joined by Gobber and Grump.

"So, you are Serenity, the famous dragon healer my son has been talking about", Valka remarked, "I am Valka, Hiccup's mother".

"I'm not that famous", Serenirty embarrassedly stated, "I am Serenity. It is nice to finally meet you."

"So, this is Serenity, in the flesh", Eret declared in his thick accent, "She is even prettier in person". He grabbed her hand and kissed the top of it.

Serenity quickly jerked her hand back. "Um, thanks?", she said awkwardly.

"_Anyways, now that we got the formalities out of the way, why don't we talk about the problem you are facing"_ , Tenor quickly asserted, changing the subject for Serenity's sake.

"_Yes, you are right, Tenor"_ , Aurora regarded and then turned to Hiccup, "_What did you have in mind?_"

"Everyone in this room, except for Gobber, and Grump, will all go and follow this mysterious attacker and his dragon. We will then talk to him, and ask why is the map so valuable and why he had to raid Berk to do it", Hiccup announced to the whole group.

"Question: won't he just attack us again?", asked Tuffnut.

"Again, the only reason he raided Berk was for him to get the map"

"Then why are we gonna ask him why he raided Berk, if we already know the answer?", questioned Ruffnut.

"If someone is going to attack my village, I WILL find out the true intention as to why they choose to do so. What I am trying to say, is that I didn't like the guy's tone when he confronted us. There was more to him than meets the eye", countered Hiccup.

"And what will you do after?", implored Serenity nervously, knowing who the assailant was.

"Nothing. I don't want to hurt the guy. I just want to talk to him.

Why?", Hiccup replied, catching on to her nervousness.

"I, just don't want anybody coming out of this hurt...that's all", she responded.

"What if he attacks us again, he technically could do so, since we said we wouldn't follow him", worried Fishlegs.

"You all know how stubborn I can be, do you really think I am going to let this guy walk away?", Hiccup voiced rhetorically.

Everybody couldn't argue with that logic.

"All right", Hiccup asserted, looking around the room, "We will leave tomorrow morning. I want everybody to pack their things tonight and get a good night's rest. I don't know how long this will take, so pack necessary items like food, extra clothing, etc. We will all meet at the plaza right when the sun meets the ocean tomorrow morning. Got it?"

All the humans and dragons nodded their approval. With that, they were all dismissed for tomorrow's quest.

The Draconians and Serenity pulled themselves aside afterwards to have a private conversation.

"Do-do you really think it could be him", Serenity asked Re anxiously.

"_I think it is him. He is the only other human we have taught our language to, besides you", Re answered, "_The only thing that is different, is that he is grown now"._

"_What are we going to do when we meet him? It's been 10 years, Re. Do you think he has forgotten about us?", asked Tenor restlessly.

"_Don't say such a thing, Tenor!", shouted Aurora, "_He can't forget us, we were the ones that raised him ever since we found him in that destroyed village". _

"_The only thing I am worried about is how he is going to react when we meet him. Will he be mad?", Re thought out loud.

"We will find our answer once we meet him", soothed Serenity.

"_It's just, a lot to take in, that's all", uttered Tenor. Everybody couldn't have said it better.

"Come on guys, we are have a big day tomorrow. It's best that we get all the sleep while we can", vocalized Serenity.

And with that, they all went to the side of Hiccup's house. Serenity set up her tent and dozed off, while the three dragons surrounded her and settled on the ground to go to sleep. Everybody was out like a light in minutes, except for Re. He had a lot going through his mind. Even though he and his mate found him abandoned, they both took him in and raised him as one of their own. As his adopted, human son grew, he looked past the obvious differences he and Chris had and bonded with him. He treated him like his own hatchling. He was proud

to call him his son, regardless of what anyone ever said. He sighed, wondering how tomorrow was going to play out. And with that, he fell asleep.

Re has faced many problems; being the king of the dragons' homeland and all. But the biggest problem he will ever face, will come sooner than he expected; the confrontation/reunion he was bound to have with his son, and the events that would follow.

6. Chapter 6

****366 viewsâ€|. Wowâ€|. I can't even process this. Thank you all. I really appreciate the fact that you guys would read my story. I didn't expect this much of a turnout! and a shoutout to all my followers and favorites!. and a Thank You to Serenity Dragonrider for letting me use her characters!****

As the new day dawned across the shivering sea, the viking gang and the inhabitants of Draconia were making sure they all had their gear checked. Astrid was sharpening her axe; Serenity was double checking her medical supplies to make sure they were all accounted for in her bag; Fishlegs was making sure that all of his dragon stat cards were in his pouch (and had some extra materials to forge new ones for the dragons he was soon to meet!); and Hiccup made sure he had packed enough Zippleback gas ammo for his sword, Inferno.

After everybody was done and accounted for, they all mounted on their respective dragons. "Is everyone ready?", Hiccup asked his entourage. They all confirmed. "Good, now since they left Berk about 3 days ago, their scent will be faint, but Skullcrusher here can pick up any smell, no matter how faint it may be".

"Wait,um, how is he gonna lead us to anything if he has nothing to go on?", inquired Fishlegs, in his squeaky voice.

"Good question, Fishlegs. I put the map inside a chest, so in order to get to the map he had to touch the chest. Skullcrusher has already picked up the scent. We will follow his lead. Now with that said, I want all of us in a defense flying formation. We will make a 'V' with Eret in the front, and Re and Aurora at the ends. Everyone one else will fill in between", explained Hiccup. With that said, they all took to the skies towards foreign land.

They flew southwest of Berk. All they saw for hours was nothing but ocean. Blue, vacant ocean. They would change direction here and there as they followed Skullcrusher's nose, but they still went in the general direction, with nothing but the vast, deep water below them. They all flew in silence, with minor chit-chatting along the way. It seemed like a normal flight. Every viking and dragon were all flying comfortably with nothing at all bothering them, except for the Draconians. They all had troubled looks on their faces, with Re being the worst.

The Berkians noticed their behavior at some point, but were too uncomfortable to say anything. Valka noticed the tension, sighed, and broke the ice. "What troubles your mind, Re?".

Re looked at Valka timidly. "_Nothing_", he responded.

"No offense, but something does. You've had that look plastered on your face ever since we left Draconia. Not just you, but Aurora, Tenor, and Serenity, as well", Astrid interjected.

The Draconians looked at one another.

"_They might as well know now_", Aurora sighed.

"Know what?", Hiccup questioned suspiciously.

"We-we know who attacked your village Hiccup", Serenity solemnly stated.

"And you decided to share this with us now because?", Hiccup pressed sarcastically.

"_Because he is our son!_", Re bursted out roughly."_Our son that, until a few days ago, we all thought was dead"_", he added.

Everyone was quiet for a few seconds.

"How can you guys have a human son, if you are dragons?", Snotlout asked dumbly.

"He is obviously adopted Snotlout", Hiccup replied annoyed.

Aurora sighed sadly. "_Back when Re was crowned King and I the queen, one of our first priorities was to scout surrounding, foreign islands and check to see if the villagers there were of any threat to our nation. Well, Aurora and I came across a destroyed village. There was no remnants of life there. That is, until we heard a cry. A faint cry. We decided to see where it originated, and as we got closer, we realized it was a baby's cry. And to our shock we found a small baby boy, inside of a completely burned hut. We don't know how the baby survived but he did. There wasn't a single scratch on him"._

Everybody was completely silent, listening to the Draconians' story.

Re continued,"_We decided that he couldn't be left there, so we decided to take him other surrounding villages. But alas, they were either see us dragons coming their way as a threat and didn't give us enough time to drop off the baby, or the village life itself was too savage to begin with. We simply couldn't leave the baby there to die, so with no other choice, we took him back to Draconia with us and raised him as our own child"._

"What did you name him?", Valka inquired.

"_We didn't know what to call him. What we did know was that he was going to be different for the rest of his life, so we decided to go with something...different. Chris"._

"Chris? And I thought Eret, son of Eret, was odd enough", Eret chimed in.

"_You could not believe the reactions the kingdom had to this kid. A handful of them thought that he would be cruel like the rest of his kind. Re, Aurora, and me sought to prove them wrong. Even though I

was the surrogate uncle, he even gave me gray scales. Man that kid could get into trouble! I mean, me and Re aren't good with kids, so you can imagine the struggle we endured with raising him, especially when he wasn't even our own species. He always kept pulling on my ear flaps!"_, Tenor groaned.

"_It's because no male is naturally good at taking care of the young as females are. We still got him to behave eventually"_, Aurora chuckled, half-sadly.

"_But still"_, Re added, "_We cared for that kid as our own hatchling. We taught him how to speak both languages, which was a pain. We taught him to walk, don't get me started on that. We taught him a mixture of things young dragons and young humans need to know. Even though we didn't know much about human and their ways, he somehow was able to incorporate both cultures perfectly! The results were amazing! Everybody saw how different he was from the rest of his kind. They were all in shock and in awe! That's when they all realized that humans weren't so bad after all. He changed their paradigms entirely!"_

"He was my first human friend ever. We meet when I first arrived at Draconia, and we became best friends. After that, we practically did everything together. Even though we were the only humans there at the time, we had so much fun!" Serenity reminisced. "And honestly, I kinda was the one that got him in all that trouble anyway", she embarrassingly laughed.

Everyone turned their heads to look at Serenity in surprise.

"_Really? How so?"_, Re asked the million dollar question.

"Most of those ideas we had were...mine. He said that he didn't want me to get in trouble, so he always took the blame. I tried to share the burden, but he wouldn't let me. We were just 6 at the time, what do you expect?", she retorted, uncomfortable with all the attention she was getting.

"_Anyway"_, Re chuckled, "_He pretty much changed everything after that. We decided that we shouldn't be afraid of humans and should try to make peace with them. And what other way to show cooperation and friendship between two species than to start a dragon riding institution"._

"You mean-", Fishlegs started.

"_He was the inspiration of the dragon riding institution back on Draconia. As we know of, he and Serenity were the first ones ever to ride dragons. Once more humans saw that us dragons were gentle creatures, they came to Draconia to learn how to ride a dragon and lived in the village near the institution. Everything else pretty much fell into place from there"_, Re finished.

Then as quickly as Re's mood was beaming with happiness from the distant memories, it shifted to darkness and despair.

"_Then, one day, I...Iâ€¦"_, Re's flight was starting to become weak as he could barely finish his sentence, "_I lost him"._

The only thing that could be heard was the dragons' wing beats at that point.

Astrid hated to be the one to say this, but she had to ask. "How did you lose him?", she voiced quietly.

The Draconians all tensed up. Re shuddered at having to recall the memory, "_One day, Chris and I were on a scouting mission, checking out more potentially dangerous villages. He said that he wanted to tag along, but I denied him. After several long minutes of his pleas, I eventually let him accompany me. He was 12 at the time. I knew he could fend for himself, but a parent can never stop worrying, you know? Anyway, on the island we were at, we had to make camp there for the night as a thunderstorm forced us to stay on the island. It was nothing that I had experienced before. Wellâ€¦ in the middle of the night, we were ambushed by the village that we were scouting. How they found us? I don't know, but we escaped and were forced to fly home through the storm. I had my armor on, so I had to fly low, to avoid attracting lightning. My main challenge was to avoid the dangerous waves, while balancing a human on me"_, he painfully explained.

"_Thenâ€¦ he, he fell off of me. The rain, plus my haphazard flying must have caused it. All I could remember that day was his screams, him calling for his dad, for me, as he fell off my saddle and into the ocean. I searched for hours, trying to find him. Even after the storm passed, I didn't stop looking. Then, I flew back to Draconia as fast as I could and gathered every able-bodied dragon and rider to help me search the ocean for any sign of Chris. We searched for weeks, before we had to call off the search. But when everyone else came to terms with the truth, I did not. I still kept searching, I still didn't give up!"_, Re choked out, "_I finally had to stop when it was taking a toll on my health"._

"_...And now, you call on me to help you track down your attacker who is more than likely my son. It's just hard to process, what with all these overwhelming emotions and thoughts in my mind"_, Re concluded.

A few minutes of silence ensued. Then Hiccup was the one who broke the silence, "Well Re, I can assure you that no harm will come to your son from any of my people", Hiccup said firmly.

Re looked at Hiccup with sincerity, "_Thank you"_, he replied, with a tone full of gratitude.

They flew until it was almost dark before they found an island that they could spend the night on. They immediately made camp, ate, and fell asleep. Then they would wake up right when the sun came up, pack up their things, and fly to wherever the scent came from. They kept on repeating this process for 6 more days before they came to a roadblock.

The moon was high in the sky when they landed on the beach of a jungly-looking landmass. They all dismounted as Skullcrusher was sniffing vigorously at every little thing his nose could get its hands on.

"_What is the matter?"_, implored Tenor.

"_His scent is here, but not here. It's...faint, for a lack of a better term. But there are also many, many dragon scents here as

well"_, Skullcrusher responded. He then turned to regard Re, "_My king, I don't really know how to explain this butâ€¦ he was here. Now he's not. The scents from all the other dragons on this island are masking his scent"._

"_Then with that many dragons, one of them is bound to have seen Chris. We will continue our search tomorrow morning. Thank you for all of your efforts", _Re replied. Skullcrusher bowed his head in gratitude.

"_The scent is here, but faint. Many dragons are in this area, as I have been told by Skullcrusher. I believe one of them has to have seen Chris. We will continue first thing tomorrow"_, Re informed Hiccup.

"Sounds like a plan", Hiccup yawned out sleepily, "In the meantime, we should get some sleep".

"_I couldn't agree with you more"_, Re asserted.

With that, all the dragons and vikings made their camp for what seemed like the final time and fell asleep. The next morning was as typical as any morning. The sun was casting the oranges and pinks of dawn, the birds were chirping, and the waves were rolling onto the beach. Hookfang woke up early and decided to go fishing. What caught him off guard was that, in the corner of his eye, he saw something long, thin, and black. As he turned his attention toward it, he realized it was the tail of a black dragon, a night fury, who was watching their whole group casually from one of the limbs of the many trees that composed that landmass. He snarled loudly at the night fury, and flamed up, which alerted the rest of the party from their slumber. They all looked to where Hookfang was snarling at and all were flabbergasted to see the female night fury there.

"_It's about time that you all woke up!"_, Windwalker remarked.

7. Chapter 7

****Hello everyone. I hope all of you are enjoying this story. Could you all take some time to review my chapters? It would mean a lot to me.. And again I am sorry for any grammatical and/or spelling mistakes. I don't have a beta reader..****

Everyone looked up toward the intruder, wondering why and how she got there.

Windwalker lazily turned her attention toward Hookfang, "_You know, your flames won't work here"._

"_And why not?!", _ Hookfang retorted.

"_Look around you genius. Haven't you noticed that the temperature is warmer over here? Haven't you noticed the air is thicker and warmer? It's because there is water in the air here. It rains a good amount over here. So your flame trick won't get you far, unless you want to exhaust yourself. Which probably would happen considering how big your arrogance is. Not to mention your ego"_, Windwalker chuckled.

Hookfang was mad, but quiet as he came to terms with Windwalker's comment. He flamed down as she suggested.

"_Woah, it is another Night Fury"_, Tenor gasped.

"_No. I'm a Shockjaw. Of course I am a Night Fury. You don't get out much, do you?"_, Windwalker replied sarcastically.

Tenor was offended and was about to respond, but Windwalker decided to change the subject.

"_So"_, Windwalker asserted, readjusting herself on the tree limb she was on, "_you just don't learn do you? Why are you here?"_, she addressed to Toothless.

"_You know damn well why am I here"_, Toothless growled.

"_Oh yeah, you were the one that tried to catch me. Or should I say, couldn't catch me even if you had your titan activated"_, she grinned back.

"_Well look around you. Does it look like you will be getting away this time"_, Toothless stated, gesturing to his party.

"_Trust me hun. I have faced worse than this"_, she yawned casually, "_If you are here for a rematch, or to reclaim your pride, or whatever it is that brought you here, it won't work in your favor"._

"_ENOUGH"_, Re roared out.

This got everyones' attention.

"_Look. we are here for one reason: to know the reason behind your attack on our allies' village. And to do that, we need to speak with your rider"_, Re stated.

"_Rider? What makes you think I have a rider?"_, Windwalker sarcastically replied, clearly amused with the situation.

"_I DO NOT HAVE TIME FOR YOUR GAMES! Your attack on Berk was too organized for a mere pack of dragons to perform. A human had to have planned it out. And it just so happens that our allies here saw a human on your back when the raid happened. Either tell me where he is, or I will execute you for obstruction of justice! As your king, I have a right to do so"_, Re hissed. It has been 5 minutes since he met her and already he was getting fed up with her.

Windwalker's face suddenly darkened. "_If you do that, you wouldn't know the consequences of that action. You don't know what I, or my nest is capable of. Regardless if I had a rider or not, why would I help you out? Why would I give out information concerning the ones I love? What have you ever done for me? Are you suggesting that if any person were to come up to me, clad in shiny armor, I should bend over backwards for them? For people that I don't even know? Tell me, my king, have you even checked up on your so called kingdom? What are you doing to help dragons in need all around the world?"_, she accused.

Re was quiet at that.

"_Do you wanna know why I am talking to you like this? It's because I don't even know you. NO ONE IN THIS REGION DOES. I am not even sure the whole world knows their king and queen. As far as anyone in this area is concerned, you are a stranger, a trespasser. I get informed that in the middle of the night, some unknown group of dragons and vikings land on my shores, and I should just treat them like their one of the family? No. It doesn't work that way. What if you are dangerous? I don't know what you are capable of. How do I know you won't hurt the ones I care about? I am doing what any, smart, reasonable alpha would do. So if you are accusing me of 'obstruction of justice', there would be no justice at all. For you to abuse power, would make you a tyrant, because you would be establishing yourself as the ruler of all, and destroying anything that disobeys your command. No one can rule everything. It would be too much to handle. That is why there are so many alphas. We are here to help guide dragons, to lead them. And for you to just command authority and respect from dragons that don't even know who you are, much less the title you were given, would be asking a fish to fly when he has no wings to begin with"_, Windwalker concluded.

Everyone was dead silent.

Windwalker jumped down from the tree she was on, making everybody around her jump back defensively. All except the Draconians, who stood their ground.

She got close to Re's face, "_If you want respect, you must earn it. And that applies to every living thing, be it dragons or vikings"_, she seethed.

"Look, we mean no harm to you..girl. We just want to talk, is all", approached Hiccup calmly.

Toothless immediately tried to block Hiccup from Windwalker, but Hiccup was persistent. Windwalker turned her attention to the oncoming human.

"We don't want to fight, or anything. We just want to know why that map meant so much to you guys. I mean, why couldn't you just asked us instead of raiding us, huh girl?", Hiccup replied, pulling out a fish and offering it to Windwalker and placing it on the ground

Windwalker sniffed the fish absently and looked at Hiccup intensely. Hiccup gazed back. They were staring at each other for a good, few seconds before she snorted and pawed the fish back to Hiccup. Her expression softened.

"_I appreciate this gesture, human, but I am not hungry at the moment"_, she rejected.

Hiccup looked at the fish and then back to her.

"Keep it then. If I know anything about night furies, they are always hungry", Hiccup smiled.

Windwalker was shocked at Hiccup negating her negation. She turned to regard Toothless who was eyeing them both warily, "_Your human is something else, you know that?"_. Toothless said nothing in

return.

She then focused her attention back to the Draconians, " _You see? That is how one approaches a mere human approached me better than all 4 of you com-"._

"_Look, we are sorry. Cut us some slack, okay? We are just trying to look for our son"_ , Aurora exasperatedly breathed out.

"_Oh. Well, why didn't you start with that? This could've gone a lot differently. Anyways, I will help you as much as I can. Although, I have not been informed about any lost hatchlings yet", _Windwalker mentioned.

"_That's the thing, our son...is your rider"_ , Re replied with strain.

Windwalker tensed up. She looked at Re and then Aurora. She let out a breath she didn't know she was holding. "_I didn't think this day would come"_ , she replied shakily.

"_I'm sorry for being antsy, it's just-"_ , Re started.

"_Save it, I understand completely. My apologies. Follow me, I am sure you want to meet him"_ , Windwalker voiced as she sprang into the air and hovered.

"_Definitely"_ , Re said. He turned around to the rest of the group. "_Let's go everybody"_ , he announced. All the humans mounted onto their respective dragons, and took to the skies. When they were airborne, they all followed Windwalker's lead.

All below them were thick, tall, green trees. They covered every inch of the ground as they passed. It seemed like it could go on forever. To say it was green was an understatement. It was calm. They passed multiple mountains and valleys. Other dragons would look at them in shock, but once they saw that Windwalker was leading them, they all went back to minding their own business. They angled down a bit as they descended to a small clearing. Windwalker then proceeded to walk into the giant mouth of a cave. They all followed into the cave entrance. As they were walking down a tunnel, many dragons looked at them from smaller tunnels, branched off from the entrance tunnel. Some would hide their children behind them, shielding them from the foreigners. Some would growl at them. Some paid them no mind at all.

'It seems that Windwalker was right. No one knows who we really are', Tenor thought.

At last, the cave opened out into a huge, underground field. It was a substantial plain lined with short grass. It had a few rocks jutting out of the ground here and there, with the tallest rock in the middle. Many smaller caves and tunnels, to destinations unknown, dotted the walls of the inside of the mountain. To say it was an elaborate cave system would be describing it basically. It was so much more than that. The pockmarked tunnels and caves seemed to go on up forever until they reached the very tall cave ceiling. The natural architecture of this cave system resembled a tree, with the smaller caves and tunnels being the branches.

"_Welcome to my home"_, announced Windwalker to the rest of the group,"_this is the trunk of our den"._

"_Where is Chris? Don't get me wrong, this place is beautiful and all, we-", _Aurora was cut off by loud roars and an undecipherable yell from up above them.

Windwalker didn't even bother to look up. She folded her ear flaps back against her head. "_That would beâ€| your son"_, Windwalker said embarrassedly. Once again, they followed Windwalker to one of the many caves lining the tall cave walls of the inside of the mountain. Windwalker landed and entered. The cave was big enough for only one dragon at a time, so all the riders had to dismount. The cave happened to be another tunnel which lead to the outside of the mountain. On the side of the mountain, was a vast ledge. So vast that all the dragons had enough room to run around and stretch. On that ledge they saw him. They saw Chris...fighting? with dragons?! Re instinctively moved to stop the quarrel, but Windwalker held up a wing to stop him. "_He is in no real danger. Watch"_, she instructed the king of dragons. Re simply nodded and watched the scene before him.

Chris looked like he was hiding behind some type of wall. He was huffing and puffing and he didn't notice the new arrivals. He was caught up in the moment. This time, instead of wearing his thick, winter coat, he simply had a dark blue undershirt on. He then hopped from wall to wall, which were scattered variously along the edge. On the opposite side of him, were 3 fierce looking dragons. They all seemed to be guardingâ€|.. a flag? They all charged him. One of the dragons, swiped a claw at one of the walls,shattering it instantly. She was surprised to see no one behind it. Then she saw movement out of her eye, but alas she was unable to react in enough time, for Chris punched her in the spot between her shoulder and her neck, and she was out like a light. He then jumped over her body and continued forward. The next dragon, a green-yellow looking dragon proceed to swipe his tail at him. Chris jumped over it easily. The dragon then attacked him. Chris effortlessly avoided all of his attacks. It looked like he was dancing with the dragon. When the dragon extended its wing for an assault, Chris took it and pressed down on a certain part of it. The assaulting dragon gasped when that wing fell to the ground instantly. He couldn't move it, but still, that didn't stop him. He was so focused on trying to stop Chris, that he didn't see the last, oncoming dragon heading towards him. The last dragon, a purple looking dragon with long horns, came at Chris, trying to catch him off-guard. Chris pretended that he didn't see him. The last dragon attempted to ram Chris. Chris decided to move away at the last minute, and the two dragons collided with each other with a loud thud. They both groaned in pain and didn't notice Chris approaching them and hitting them in their necks, effectively knocking them unconscious. Chris panted in victory, and swaggered up to the flag and yanked it up into the air.

"_So, look at you, all big and mighty because you could retrieve a flag"_, Windwalker teased, approaching Chris from his side. The rest of the group was stunned to not have noticed that Windwalker left them mid-battle.

"Oh would you shut up and let me have my victory", he retorted grinning. Chris then hugged Windwalker affectionately. She grinned as she pulled back. Her facial expression then faltered a little. "_You

have visitors, Chris", _she told him.

"What do you mean?", he asked puzzled.

Windwalker gestured to the new arrivals with her head.

Puzzlement was on Chris's face when he turned to meet them. Then, his face shifted from confusion to a mixture of horror and shock. He was stiff. He couldn't move a muscle. When Re and Aurora noticed that he was looking at them, they went rigid as well. Everything was still for a few minutes.

"M-m-mom?...d-dad?", Chris choked. He had tears forming in his eyes, threatening to burst out of his sockets.

"_Son.._", Aurora said with hope and love. Re couldn't say anything, he was overwhelmed with joy and worry. He opened his mouth but had no words. Who knew that the king of all the dragons, could ever shed a tear? Chris ran to both of them at full speed. "MOM!DAD!", he yelled at the top of his lungs. The king and queen of Draconia ran as fast as their forms could carry them, and tackled their son in a tight hug. Re wrapped both of his wings around his human son and his mate, as he and Aurora both nuzzled Chris fondly.

Everyone could feel the love that emanated off the 3; It was strong. The king, queen, and their son, continued to hug. They didn't care who was watching, or how long they were there for. They all had one thought in their minds: Their family was finally complete.

8. Chapter 8

****Hey guys, sorry for posting this later than usual. I was busy with things. And this chapter is by far the longest so that's also a reason why I took longer than usual. Anyways, enjoy. Again, sorry for spelling/grammar mistakes. It's hard reviewing by yourself :/****

The king, queen, and their son, were in their tight embrace for what seemed like hours. Nobody spoke a single word, as to not ruin the intimate moment between the 3. Everybody just watched the reunion, with smiles on their lips and touched hearts.

Finally, Chris gasped for air, as the sudden realization hit him;he was in an hug so tight, the need for oxygen barely registered in his mind. "You'reâ€¦I needâ€¦", Chris barely whispered.

As the words registered in Re's mind, he quickly let go of his son and mate. Aurora followed suit. Chris was dropped to the ground and stayed there, inhaling vigorously. Aurora immediately bent her neck down so her son could have something to grasp on. Chris wrapped an arm around her neck, and Aurora gently lifted him to his feet. "Thanksâ€¦mom", he said hesitantly.

"_No worries, my son_", Aurora said reassuringly.

Chris stared at both of his parents, collecting his thoughts. He had so many questions he had to ask, but was having difficulty picking the ideal one. The king and queen of Draconia were having the same trouble. Awkward silence ensued thereafter.

Windwalker coughed uncomfortably, unsure if that was the right thing to do or not. Her answer was everybody staring at her. She opened her eyes wide at the mistake she just made, and looked the other way, hoping that all the prying eyes would leave her alone.

Re decided to be the one to break the silence, "_Soâ€|how are thingsâ€|"_

"How about we talk about this more privately?", Chris asked the group anxiously.

Everybody nodded quickly and followed Chris back to the trunk of the den. As Chris approached the ledge of the tunnel, inside the heart of the mountain, he called out to one of the flying dragons. "Hey Tiir, do you mind?", he asked as he pointed to another cave. Tiir, a female Hackatoo (a yellowish slender looking dragon), gazed to where he was pointing and smiled, "_Sure"._

She steered course to where he was, and in one swift move, Chris jumped off the ledge and onto Tiir's back. They descended to the cave where Chris jumped off and into the cave. "Thanks Tiir!"

"_Anytime"_ , and with that she flew out of sight.

The rest of the group soon landed in the cave. Windwalker joined them a few seconds later. Everyone was surprised at how big this cave was. It housed all of their party with space to hold more! The setting in that cave was unique to say the least. The cave had elevated holes in some sections of the walls that were used as shelves. There was a small pool of water in the corner of the cave, collecting water from a dripping stalactite. In the far back of the cave lay a small, but extensive gathering of animal fur and skin. Next to that was a scorched section of the cave. They were Chris and Windwalker's sleeping areas respectively. On the right side of the cave were several baskets, housing many unknown items. On the side of that was a stalagmite, where Chris' winter coat was hugging it loosely. Finally, in the middle of the room, was a fire pit, where the faint light of the previous blaze was evident. Chris went to the left side of the room, where a pile of dark wood could be seen, and gather a couple of logs. He set them down in the middle of the fire pit where Windwalker ignited the wood in turn.

"Please, make yourselves comfortable", invited Chris.

Hiccup looked to Re and Aurora who nodded their heads. Seeing how he really had no other option, he gestured for the rest of his group to settle down on the cave floor.

Chris looked around the fire pit. He noticed that all eyes were on him. He straightened himself up, and spoke with a quiet tone, "I guess I should start off with how I am standing before you guys".

Even though that question was directed mostly to the Draconians, the Berkians, especially Hiccup, were somewhat intrigued as to how the son of the king and queen survived a rather impossible feat. The draconians all looked at each other and nodded enthusiastically.

Chris let out the breath he didn't know he was holding, "Wellâ€|all I

remember that day, was you flying through the storm. It was scary, to say the least", he then looked at the king, "...Reâ€¦ I mean, dad...it wasn't your fault, okay? Truthfully speaking, I did fall off. It was the rainâ€¦ It made it too slippery to hold on to your saddle, dad. I know you think it was your fault, but I can assure you it wasn't".

Re glumly lowered his head. "_It was my fault, my son. I should've made sure you were properly on my saddle.I should'veâ€¦"_ ,Re said with melancholy.

"And you did. Dad, you did what any father would. You made sure your son was out of harms way. You did! It was either the storm or the ambushing villagers, and you chose the safer path. You were thinking rationally, and I can't blame you for that", Chris soothed.

"_If it wasn't for that stupid stormâ€¦"_ , Re seethed with anger.

"Dad, it was nobody's fault but nature's. No one can control it. How were you suppose to no the storm was going to be that harsh?"

Re reluctantly accepted the facts. As much as he blamed himself for the loss of his son, he was overjoyed that he was still alive after all these years.

"_One question still bothers me though"_ , Tenor commented.

"And what would that be?", Chris asked.

"_How did you survive? As futile as it may have seemed, we searched the ocean for you. How was it that you escaped the storm alive?"_

"Wellâ€¦.dragons", Chris answered nonchalantly.

"What do you mean by that?", Valka interjected.

Chris turned to her, not expected the new voice and replied,"I had no idea how it happened, butâ€¦.I was sinking in the sea, I blacked out, I woke up, and the next thing I knew, a family of Sea Shockers saved me from drowning".

"Sea Shockers...", Valka voiced wonderously,"They are just so compassionate. They were the ones that saved Toothless from drowning when I first met my son".

Toothless shivered at the memory of having Hiccup taken away from him and groaned his displeasure. Hiccup patted him on the neck. "It's all right, bud. I'm here now.", he consoled.

Toothless nudged his rider in gratitude. Chris and Windwalker looked at the other night fury/rider duo, then at each other, and smiled in remembrance of how much they reminded them of themselves.

"They dropped me off at a nearby island. They said they were suspicious of me at first, but once they recognized that I was able to speak their tongue, they were a whole lot friendlier to me", Chris continued.

"_How were you able to survive all the years onward?"_, Aurora implored Chris.

Windwalker held her head up high, "_I saved him"_, she state matter-of-factly.

Chris snapped his head toward her. "No you didn't! I saved you, if I remember correctly", Chris negated in disbelief.

Windwalker scoffed, "_I could've easily broken out of that cage!"_

"That's why you couldn't move right? The heavy iron shackles that restrained you were just so weak you could've broken out of them at any time?", Chris grinned.

"_You're damn right!"_, Windwalker growled, her pride blinding her.

"_I'm confused"_, Re asserted.

Chri broke his glare at Windwalker to regard his father in a response, "Well, you seeâ€|. we were both prisoners to a foreign tribe. Even though we are by far the best warriors on this land, we were both young and naive at the time. We overlooked certain things that we now call rookie mistakes".

Windwalker sighed and broke her glare away from Chris. "We didn't see what was plainly an obvious trap. I was captured by a net trap, while Chris was simply backed into a corner", Windwalker continued.

Snotlout voiced his confusion out loud, "Uh what?".

"Okay, okay, okay. Here is what happenedâ€|.", announced Chris.

****(Flashback)****

"tergesa-gesa sehingga! bergerak!", shouted one of the soldiers.

"Look, I have no idea what you are saying-ah!", Chris was cut short with a painful jab to the back, "Okay, I'll stop talking!"

"budak bodoh", another soldier muttered.

Chris could do nothing but follow his captors commands. 'Can my life get any worse? First I lose my parents, then the family of dragons that rescued me left me on my own, now I get captured for picking berries. What else can go wrong?', he shouted in his mind.

His questions were soon answered when he arrived at his assailants' base camp. As far as his eye could tell, the cone-shape looking tarps, stretched out for miles. Although, he didn't go straight to the heart of the camp, he went to the right side of the camp and inside one of those tents. Immediately he was overwhelmed by the heat of the tent. His surroundings told him he was in a makeshift forge.

"tidak berjuang terlalu banyak kerana ini akan menyakitkan", one of his captors grinned darkly.

Chris's confusion was met by his captors forcing him on his knees and stripping off his shirt. They held each of his arms in place for the event to come. Chris was scared. He tried looking over his shoulder, but was met each time with a whack to the head. He did manage to catch sight of a glowing tool. A red, hot glowing tool! Chris fought and kicked and screamed with all his might trying to escape his current fate but alas, his captors overpowered him. All Chris could do was scream in pain and grit his teeth as he was branded on his lower back.

Chris fazed in and out of consciousness as he was thrown into a cell to probably rot for the rest of his life in. 4 days passed until he finally gathered enough energy to take stock of his situation.

Chris groaned as he sat up groggily; taking in his surroundings. He was in a dark room, and all that he could see were other cages and crates scattered variously around him. As far as he could tell, there were no guards at all. He was chained up. He was in a cage, a rather simple one. In fact too simple. He studied his confinement, as much as his restraints would allow him, intensely, especially the lock. It was rather...weak. That alone confused him. He looked over his restraints and noticed that they looked a lot stronger than the lock did.

"I guess they spent so much time making sure that I couldn't escape from my confinements that they forgot about the actual confinement itself, holding me", Chris thought out loud.

Many ideas flashed through his head, mainly escaping the current predicament that he was in. He was soon interrupted by a groan next to him. He turned to the side and saw the silhouette of something big. 'It's moving so it can't be dead..', Chris thought. He saw the unidentifiable prisoner stir for a couple of seconds, then it opened its eyes. It's big, golden, reptilian eyes.

The owner's eyes focused in and out, adjusting to the darkness, blinking simultaneously. Once it did that, it gazed at the noise that awoke it.

"_Ugh, it just had to be a __human__. They could've just put me near others of __my_ _kind.", _Windwalker snorted, dismissing Chris.

"Hey! What's wrong with me! Barely 7 seconds since you met me, and you start complaining about me!", Chris snapped back.

Windwalker's eyes widened at the reply she just heard. "_What?!...Waitâ€|. Can you, can you understand me?"_, she asked doubtfully.

"Nooo, you're just hallucinating because you ate a basket full of eels-of course I can understand you!", Chris shouted sarcastically, "How else is it that I can hear exactly what you're saying to me?".

Even though Windwalker was practically in a helpless situation, she couldn't help but argue back at Chris's sarcastic remark. "_Well I'm

sorry. It's not everyday you wake up to a human that can speak Dragonese, let alone insult a dragon, who happens to be a night fury!"_, Windwalker shot back.

"Am I suppose to be intimidated, just because you have black scales? Big deal", Chris annoyedly countered.

"_You know, for a child, especially a human, you have the ferociousness of a dragonâ€| a pathetic one"_, Windwalker smirked.

Chris sighed sarcastically, "As much as I want to argue with you forever and shut you up, I plan to get out here".

"_And how do you plan on doing that? I don't know if you've noticed, but we aren't in a position to do much of anything right now. If a dragon can't escape this prison, then a human cannot either"._

"Exactly. Right now, we can't. But patience is the key", Chris spoke with confidence.

Windwalker sighed in defeat, "_All right, if you say so"_, and slumped her head to the ground as she had nothing better to though Windwalker barely knew, and was arguing with Chris for 5 minutes, she started to gain an interest towards this stranger. Not only could he speak her language, but he bravely stood up to a dragon, a Night Fury, unlike any other human she had ever encountered before. What confused her even more was that he wasn't afraid of her. Almost as if dragons were a big part of his life.

A couple of hours went by. Windwalker tried to doze off her and there, but she was constantly interrupted by a scratching noise. After being tormented relentlessly by that horrible noise, she roared out in frustration, "Okay, just what in the hell do you think you're doing?!"

She was met by an angry shush from Chris. Before she could retaliate, a guard came into the tent, shouted something weird in his language and whacked Windwalker on the side of the head with a thin, blunt object. She seethed with pain and rage. She normally would have stopped the weapon, but being a prisoner of war can wear a person out.

After he chuckled something evilly, he left. As Windwalker recovered from her pain she happened to notice Chris glaring at him with a burning hatred.

"Once I get out, I am going to skin that bastard", he commented darkly.

Windwalker was shocked at his intention. "_Since when do you care about dragons?"_, she asked dubiously.

Chris turned his glare towards her. "Look, I don't care what you think of me. But where I grew up, you don't treat a fellow dragon as trash. You treat him with respect. And when I see someone treating a dragon like dirt...ooh, that makes my blood boil", Chris seethed with a voice of venom.

Windwalker was shocked, to say the least, at Chris's compassion toward dragons. 'Alright, now I definitely want to know who this guy is', Windwalker firmly decided in her head.

After a couple more minutes of scratching, Chris happily breathed out in victory, "I got it!".

Windwalker turned her attention toward Chris, "_Got what?"_.

"This!", Chris exclaimed, holding up a nail with his bloody fingers, "I got it from the crate next to me!".

Windwalker gave Chris an annoyed look, "_How is __that_ _suppose to help, hm?"_.

"Well, directly, it can't help you. But, it can help me, whichâ€¦", as Chris replied, he directed the nail toward the keyhole in his right arm shackle. He would wiggle and turn the nail until he heard a click and the heavy shackle fell to the bottom of the cage with a muffled thud.

"...can help me escape", Chris finished.

Windwalker stared at the human, mouth agape, as he amazingly unlocked the remaining shackles from his body. Then once he was free of those, he stuck the nail in a certain position between the lock and the door and kicked the nail in. This in turn, broke the cage door open and he crawled out into the open space.

"Now, the nails helps you indirectly, because it freed me, which will now allow me to free you", Chris added casually. As he spoke, he opened up Windwalker's cage door and proceeded to free her from her bindings. Once she was free, she quickly rushed out, took in a deep breath, and stretched her wings.

As quickly as she enjoyed her momentary freedom, she formed an escape plan to get all the other captured prisoners out of here. She turned to Chris, "_Look, I don't know about you, but I-we need to free the rest of these-. Hey, what are you doing?"_, she asked Chris angrily.

Chris was peeking out of the opening of the tent, "I am looking for an escape route. Hurry and free the others. I will try to stop any guards that draw their attention to this tent".

Windwalker was speechless. This kid, was already a step ahead of her. 'I definitely need to keep my eye on this kid', she thought as she went to free the other captives. As Windwalker was finishing freeing the last prisoner, she heard a muffled cry from behind her. She snapped her head toward the sudden noise, only to find a dead soldier with Chris standing over him. She was frankly surprised that he was able to kill quite easily at his age, but then again, she had to kill when she was young as well. She quickly shoved that dark thought to the back of her mind.

Chris was frantically searching the tent for something, "Come on, come on. Where is it?!".

After some more rummaging, he found his desired items, "Yes!". He

strapped his twin swords to his waist again.

"_So, what's the plan?_", Windwalker questioned.

"It's practically a straight shot forward. As we ascend to the sky, we scatter, making it harder to capture us".

"_Good. Did you hear all that?_", she asked the rest of the captured dragons. They nodded their affirmation.

A couple of those prisoners were human, so they were not so keen on having a dragon so close to them. They glanced at the dragons nervously, while the latter did nothing but shrug them off.

Chris turned to the rest of his species and told them very slowly, "Run awayâ€ After... I... go". As he spoke, he gesticulated every word.

The foreign prisoners grasped the concept of what he was trying to say, albeit they didn't really understand what he was saying.

He turned to Windwalker, "I will distract the enemy and cause a ruckus, while you guys slip away".

"_No. You can't handle all of them by yourself!" _

"It's either 1 or 20. Now once you see me attracting most of the soldiers, take to the sky. Grab the humans in your claws. They are too scared to do anything so they won't fight back. By the time the soldiers know you are missing, or hear the humans' screams, you guys will be long gone".

Windwalker gave Chris a stern glare. "_Fine_", was all she muttered. She relayed the information to the rest of the dragons and they all got ready. Once Chris made sure everybody was set, he ran from the tent as fast as he can, yelling and screaming at the top of his lungs like a banshee. Once the troops started to take notice, he drew out his swords and started slicing through them left to right, while expertly avoiding their attacks. Once a majority of the soldiers were preoccupied with Chris, she let out a roar and took off toward the sky, with the now-free dragons following her with humans in random dragons' claws.

"_Scatter!_", she ordered once they were high enough in the air. The dragons went in all directions, flying off to who knows where, while the dragons with human cargo flew towards a nearby set of mountains to drop off their 'passengers'.

Windwalker just hovered in the air, contemplating her next move. She wanted to go back to her nest, but for some reason, she couldn't leave the kid behind. She scanned the base camp for him and once she saw that he was restrained to the ground with a soldier raising a sword above his head, her decision was made. She dove at the gathering of soldiers. Instead of the troops hearing the tell-tale whistle of a diving night fury, they heard nothing at all. All they were met with, was the blinding purple light of a plasma blast and the explosion that followed. Chris, being restrained to the ground, was the only one who wasn't affected by the impact. He looked around and saw the dragon he freed.

She landed and lowered her back, "_Get on now!_", she barked.

"Hold that thought", he told Windwalker. His eyes roamed the group of recovering soldiers until he locked onto his target. He sprinted to the unsuspecting man, who just so happened to be the one that hit Windwalker. At the last second he withdrew his sword and swung it at the guy's neck, effectively separating his head from his shoulders. He then ran back at Windwalker who started running as well. He mounted Windwalker effortlessly as she took to the skies, never to be seen again.

As they flew in the darkness, Windwalker had to ask, "_Wait a minute, was that the guy?"_"

"Yep", Chris beamed with pride, "Even though I couldn't skin him, a beheading is a good second".

Windwalker chuckled, "_You know what? I think we started off on the wrong paw. Can we start over?"_"

"Sure! A life story for a life story?"

"_Why not! You earned it! I am Windwalker by the way", _the dragon greeted.

"Chris", the human smiled.

(Current time)

"...and we just talked and talked and talked. All the way until we arrived here, at her nest. Over time, we learned more about each other: our troubles, our past, strengths, weaknesses, etc.", Chris stated, "Over the course of those 9 or 10 years, we fought together, worked together, played together, and so forth. The point is, we bonded and formed what most people would call a forbidden friendship. We became closer to each other and now, we are the best of friends. I consider her to be my sister. And I her brother". As Chris said the last part, Windwalker purred and nuzzled Chris affectionately, with Chris hugging and scratching Windwalker in return.

Everybody sat quiet and processed what they were just told. They all had a myriad of thoughts running through their heads. Some were shocked that Chris was able to kill so effortlessly. Others were touched at what he was willing to go through to save people he didn't even know.

"Wow", the twins said in unison.

"I can't believe I am saying this, but that was...epic", Hiccup said astoundingly.

Everyone regarded him with a look of shock. They did not expect that to come out of the chief of Berk's mouth.

"Well anyways, now let me get to the main reason why I came all this way here for", Hiccup announced, "What is so important about that map? And why did you have to raid Berk to get it?". The stern tone in his voice said that he wasn't leaving without some type of logical, reasonable answer.

Chris sighed, "That, my friend, is a grave matter on its own".

9. Chapter 9

****Hey guys, sorry for uploading this kinda late. School started so now I am even busier. But fear not, I will not abandon this story! you guys and I have come too far for that to happen. With that being said, enjoy and please review. And sorry for mistakes I have made. I don't have beta reader...****

Chris sighed, "That, my friend, is a grave matter on its own". Chris left his spot beside Windwalker and walked to one of his cave shelves. He scanned the shelf until he found a dark, clay vase. He then pulled out the map and walked back to the fire pit.

"This map", he announced as he held it up for everyone to see, "is the key to our destruction. This can not fall into my enemy's hands. If it does, not only will this dragon's nest fall, but every single nest in existence will fall, as well".

"What could be so special about that map?", scrutinized Snotlout.

"Before I get to that, you must first know who my enemy is", Chris stated. "When I first arrived at this nest, most of the dragons here were skeptical that a human, me, can be so nice to dragons. They were initially hostile until Windwalker, their alpha, told them of what I did when her and I were imprisoned at that camp. But still, they were wary of me, and to be honest, I would too. I mean, who would bring a human into a dragon's nest? Anyways, all their doubts of me were washed away when I spoke their language and told them my story and where I came from. Then, they started to trust me and soon, they opened up to me. Once I was fully welcomed and accepted, I vowed that I would help the nest as much as I can. Windwalker here decided that the best way I could pull my weight around here, was to help defend the nest".

"Question: How? I mean, you're a human and all, and you are surrounded by dragons who are bigger and stronger than you", Tuffnut interjected.

"I asked the same question to Windwalker and she said the best way to defeat your enemy, is to think like your enemy".

"Uh, so wait, you and Windwalker are enemies?", Ruffnut burst out.

"No, you dummies. She meant that if they had a human on their side, they could figure out their enemy's logic and tendencies because Chris is a human", Astrid scoffed.

"Exactly", Chris confirmed. "I was able to figure out how they would lay their dragon traps, where and when they would attack, how they would attack, and so forth, all on the back of a dragon. After constant battles that we won effortlessly, they became less and less of a problem. Pretty soon, it seemed like they had given up all on their own. That is, until they discovered, huo yao".

"_Wait a minute. First off, tell us who your enemy is. Second, what

is huo yao?"_, Tenor commented.

"Oh, I'm sorry, I totally forgot about that. My enemy is an empire, who call themselves the Song dynasty. They attack and slaughter dragons without remorse. Why? Because apparently, we mock their beliefs. Huo yao...well, it can only be described as explosive powder".

"Mock their beliefs?", voiced Fishlegs quizzically.

Chris turned his attention towards Fishlegs, "The Song worship dragons, but of a different kind. These dragons are long, sleek, have thick muzzles, huge eyebrows, no wings, and long whiskers. I have never heard of any type of dragon that has matched that description. And since no dragon in this nest comes close to fitting it, they claim us to be imposters and kill us for belittling their religion".

Aurora thought this over and commented, "_You must be talking about the ancient ones of the East. They were here a long time before Re's grandparents were king and queen. They were actually apart of my father Draco's army. They ruled this side of the world for many, long years, before they suddenly vanished"._

As everybody digested this new information, Hiccup decided to get back on track.

"Explosive Powder?", questioned Hiccup.

"Yeah, let me show you", Chris replied. He walked to a different cave shelf and grabbed a hand-sized, dark blue pouch off it. He walked back to the fire pit and stood opposite of Windwalker, across the fire. "Now I warn you, this thing is very dangerous", Chris cautioned, "You ready Windwalker?".

Windwalker nodded and quickly shielded herself with her wings. Chris opened up the bag and reached inside of it. He pulled out what looked to be black sand and threw it towards Windwalker. Once the flames consumed the powder, the fire immediately expanded and shot out towards Windwalker, accompanied by smoke and a small, but loud 'boom'. The flames engulfed about half of Windwalker's body before it dissipated into thin air.

Everyone was shocked at what just unfolded before their eyes. They backed up at the blossoming fire and took defensive positions, wary of any more surprises. The excess heat was still lingering in the cave, before Valka decided to speak, "What in the name of Odin was that?!"

"That was huo yao", Chris answered as he returned the pouch to its respect place on the shelf.

"That isâ€¦ that is sorcery!", exclaimed Eret.

"Believe me, I wish it was. But I can guarantee you it is very real", Chris responded as he sat back next to Windwalker, who came out unscathed. "...and that was just a tiny bit of it. Imagine what you could do if you had a lot of it".

"Bad things would happen", decided Serenity, "Very bad things".

Chris looked at Windwalker, then at Serenity with sad eyes. "Bad things have happened already. It's kind of hard to fight when you can't heal a wound. That is why we usually don't plan an full-scale attack. Once they're injured, they're out. We just simply can't sacrifice those numbers".

"Waitâ€¦ you have wounded? And have no way of healing them?!", Serenity shouted.

"Well, yeah".

"Where are they. I will heal them now!"

"What do you mea-. Wait, I rememberâ€¦ you were learning how to heal before I disappeared. Are you telling me you actually became a full-blown dragon healer?!", Chris asked with hope in his voice.

"Yes! We are wasting time talking. Take me to them!", ordered Serenity as she got her medical supplies off of Re's saddle.

"Windwalker, take her to the injured now!", commanded Chris.

"_You don't have to tell me twice",_ roared Windwalker. She lowered herself so Serenity can climb on. As soon as she was settled on her back, Windwalker zoomed out of the cave.

Chris released a breath that he didn't know he was holding. "Thank the gods! We finally can heal these dragons", he said more to himself.

"_You guys had no way of healing a wound?"_, Re asked.

"We can do small wounds, but now these wounds are progressing to life threatening. If you get shot by of the Song's weapons, you won't survive! Either you'd get killed instantly, or would die from the wound. That being said, I cannot attack directly. my only option is to defend. But now that we got a healer, this will help us save the dragons who risked their lives for the sake of the nest", Chris informed.

"So the Song are using 'who-whoa yow' Yao to help them win this war? How? What's their weaponry like?", Hiccup asked.

"They pack a bunch of arrows into some type of tube. That tube is packed with Huo Yao before hand, so after they package the arrows, all the have to do is ignite the powder and a swarm of arrows is flying towards you at the speed of a Night Fury. You can pretty much figure out what other types of weapons they can make with explosive power", Chris concluded for Hiccup.

Chris could see Hiccup's eyes widen as he thought about all the potential dangers Huo Yao possesses.

"This map leads to a mountain range that houses the key ingredient of Huo yao. This mountain range has pockets full of it. Just imagine how unstoppable the Song will be if they had a virtually, endless supply of it? Since I have this map, I can cut off their weapons effectively

and win this war! I'm sorry Hiccup that it had to be this way. Truly, I am. But you have to understand how important this is to me. How would I know you wouldn't give it to me peacefully and I would have to slaughter just to get this map? How would I know that you wouldn't just keep the map to yourself, discover the powder, and use it? I could not take any chances. That's why I attacked your village. But I am not the bad guy here. I told my dragons not to kill anyone on that raid. I may seem dark and mysterious, but I am not evil! ", Chris continued.

Hiccup was silent as he thought this over. After a minute of dead silence, he looked up at Chris with a sigh, "As much as I don't want to say this, I understand".

Astrid got up and yelled, "What?!" Hiccup, this man and his dragons raided our village. For Odin's sake, he almost got Toothless killed. Have you not realized that?".

"_Astrid, think about it. If I was in a war, I would do whatever it took to make sure the ones I care about were safe and that the enemy was defeated. I understand that you are upset, but please listen to reason. He got what he wanted, he has no reason to attack you guys ever again"_. Re turned to his son, "_Am I right?"._

Chris turned to his father and nodded, "Absolutely. And besides, why would I want to destroy a village, probably the only Viking village in this world, that has made a peace with dragons?".

Hiccup smirked, 'I figured so'. And with that he stood up and walked over to Chris. Chris focused his attention on Hiccup and was suspicious at what the latter was intending on doing. Hiccup locked eyes with Chris for a few seconds, then extended his hand toward him. Everyone was shocked, to say the least, at Hiccup's action, especially Astrid.

"What can I say? You seem like a good guy and treat dragons with the same, if not more, respect than I do. I want to make a truce. I want us to be allies. More importantly, I want to stop the innocent bloodshed of dragons", announced Hiccup firmly.

Chris looked Hiccup straight in the eyes, processing what he just heard. After a few seconds, he smiled and his eyes shined with joy. "Thank you, and I more than happy to call you my ally", Chris exclaimed as he shook Hiccup's hand vigorously.

Re stood up, followed by Aurora and Tenor. "_As the king of the dragons' homeland, I wish to offer mine and my comrades' help in winning this war"_, Re decided sternly.

Chris turned to face his family, and a saddened look crossed his face. "No, I-I can't ask you to do this for me. I can't let you face my problems for me. You guys just came back into my life, I-", Chris stuttered.

Re growled loudly and approached Chris, looking at him dead in the eye, "_Let's get one thing clear here. I am your father. You are my son. And though, I am worried that you have been fighting a war for about 10 years, you are an adult now. I can't tell you what to do. But, as a parent, I will always be there for you. It is our job to be there for you no matter what. We will always offer our help, because

that is what family do for each other; we look out for one another because we love each other. I love you, Chris. Did you hear me? I love you, Chris. Not only as my son, but as the man, noâ€¦ dragon, you turned out to be. You have proven yourself to be one of us countless of times, I just never got the chance to tell you so", Re finished softly.

Chris's mouth was hanging wide open in amazement. He was on the verge of tears, overwhelmed by the emotional words that left his father's mouth. He wrapped his arms around his father in a tight embrace and rested his head against his father's armour. Re reciprocated the action and nuzzled his son lovingly.

Chris pulled back with a warm smile across his face, "Let's end this war together". He then faced the rest of the group. "Let's end the slaughtering once and for all. Let's end the Song dynasty!", Chris shouted strongly.

Everyone nodded their heads in agreement (with Astrid nodding her head reluctantly, as she was still suspicious). With that, everyone returned to the fire to discuss strategy that will surely help them change the tide in the dragon-Song war.

10. Chapter 10

**Hey guys! I am so excited. I don't know why but I am and it's 3:30am where I am at. Anyways, enjoy the chapter. As always, forgive me for my mistakes as I don't have a beta reader. **

"Alright then, you guys. How are we gonna finish this?", asked Chris. Everyone in that cave, looked at him with dinner plates for eyes. Chris looked around like he had no clue as to what he just said, then let out the chuckle he held in.

"..I'm just kidding. Man, the looks you guys had on your faces, priceless", Chris smirked.

With that, the whole group glared at Chris. As Chris finished his chuckling, he glanced at the group and groaned, "I'm just trying to lighten the mood". Still the group did not falter from their glares. Chris heaved out a sigh as he got up and approached another of his cave shelves and retrieved, what appeared to be, another map, which happened to be a whole lot bigger. He unrolled it and placed it on a large, slanted piece of wood which was held up by a group of stalagmites, near the side of his dwelling.

"We are here", Chris gestured as he pointed to a specific part on the map. "The yellow, is our territory. The red, is the Song's territory. As you can see, our territory is 3x as small compared to them. The Song have no intention of making peace with the surrounding lands in this region. They just pillage and claim all within their sight, as their own. Then they move on to the next region, and repeat. We, happen to be in their path, so they tried to take us down. As you can see, my presence alone proves to you we are not some simple foe. We kick ass! Anyways, they tried relentlessly to ambush us, kill us, torture us, etc., but they don't know who they are dealing with. They just think we are clever abominations...who just happen to know the weak points of the human body, the likelihood of where a human would place a dragon trap, and the fighting style of their enemy".

"_Wait, no dragon could possibly know specifics about a human and its tendencies. They had to get the information from somewhere.."_ , Tenro trailed off as he came to a conclusion, "_are you telling meâ€|?"_

"I taught these dragons everything I know about humans. Thank the gods, the Draconian library had some books on my kind. I also told them what I learned while spying on the Song. And since I was trained early on by none other than you, and father, on how to defend myself and fight, I passed that on to the dragons here as well. I have been told by other dragons that I have saved countless of lives since I got here. Truth be told, it wasn't my teachings that shaped these dragons into what they are today. It was themselves. Apparently, because of me, the dragons in this nest are pretty much 2 steps ahead of the Song soldiers, even when I can't come up with a plan. Apparently, I am the reason dragons can rest peacefully. Apparently, I alone could stop this war, as I am claimed to be a hero of dragons. I do not believe so. Sure, I may have a great mind, or near-perfect combat skills, or whatever you would want to label me as. I simply opened a door. The dragons were the ones who had the choice of walking through it. The point is, I am not invincible. Every man will fall eventually in his lifetime. I'm just trying to do as much good as I can before I meet my demise. And I want to save all the other good people, whether dragon or human, from the damnation of evil. For I do not see a difference between my scaled friends and my scaleless ones. To me, they are one in the same; they are beautiful souls. Unfortunately, my reptilian friends are the ones who received the short end of the stick. They are the ones who are tormented by this world, not us. So when I see a dragon in need, I will certainly help them out the only way I know how: fighting. I am the knight of dragons. I will slay any evil towards dragonkind. And no one will ever take that away from me", Chris responded with valor.

The Draconians were beaming with pride at that statement, especially Re and Aurora. They could never be prouder parents than they were at that very moment.

They were at loss for words. Hiccup, on the other hand, was not. "So now that Serenity is here, healing the dragons, will you mount up offensive attacks against the Song now?"

"Noâ€|. I cannot afford to lose anymore lives. I want to come out of this with as little casualties as possible, even if it may seem futile. Like I said earlier, I only really do defensive attacks. I don't want to do anything foolish. I only have so many dragons to spare. Not to mention the staggering number of Song soldiers that practically outnumber us 100 to 1. So you can pretty see why I have to make the most wisest decisions".

"So, how is it that you were able to stand your ground in this war?", questioned Astrid.

"Well, 2 reasons really. The first, is rigorous training. Windwalker and I push the dragons beyond their absolute limits. The second, being strategic battle plans".

"How do you push the dragons past their absolute limits?", wondered Valka.

"Well, Windwalker can explain it better than I can. But seeing as how most of you in this cave cannot speak the language of the Dragonsâ€¦ all I can say is that we help them achieve a sort of 'epiphany of the mind and body', also known as the Titan Wing", explained Chris.

Everyone, for probably the 4th time that day, was shocked at the words that came out of Chris's mouth.

"_How do you unlock their Titan Wing? That's a very hard thing for a dragon to do. Heck, I haven't even unlocked my Titan Wing"_ , Re commented.

"First off, tell me what you all know of the Titan Wing", Chris countered.

"_Well, the rare Titan Wing allows a dragon to experience a 'power boost'. Said power boost, is characterized by a physical change in the dragon's body"_ , voiced Tenor.

"Exactly. For some, their scale patterns change colors. For others, they grow biggerâ€¦.For nightfuries, they glow blue".

Hiccup and Toothless' eyes grew wide at that statement. "You hear that bud, you unlocked your titan wing!", exclaimed Hiccup. Toothless purr-growled his content and poked Hiccup playfully.

Chris turned his attention towards the duo. "Hmm?"

"Well you see, when I thought I was about to meet my end-as I got shot with a blast of ice from a Bewilderbeast-Toothless shielded me and chose to sacrifice himself for me. I guess seeing me in danger, somehow unlocked his titan wing, and he defeated the Bewilderbeast. Thus, making him the alpha in our region", Hiccup explained. Toothless, on the other hand, held his head up with pride.

Chris tilted his head in surprise, "A Bewilderbeast? Wow. I must say Toothless, you certainly gained more respect from me".

Toothless flashed his classic toothless smile at Chris. "_Thank you_", Toothless grinned.

"And you barely unlocked it too. Just imagine how powerful you could be once you unlock its full potential!", Chris said in wonder.

Everyone for the 5th time, was aghast at the information Chris just relayed (well, implied).

"Full potential?", Astrid wondered aloud.

"Yes. When a dragon first unlocks his Titan Wing, the physical change surfaces, but doesn't take its final form. You can't run if you haven't learned to walk, as they say.. Once you start using the Titan Wing more often, it becomes stronger, lasts longer, and the physical change reflects that. For example, when Windwalker unlocked her Titan Wing, her back spines, and the middle of her head glowed blue. Now, her whole body-except the edges of her body-glows blue".

"_Well anyways, back to the question. How DO you unlock their Titan

Wing?"_, pressed Re.

"Windwalker and I put the trainees into a controlled situation where they must face an 'ultimatum' of sorts", answered Chris.

Re was suspicious of this,"_How do you do that?"_

Chris, sensing the trouble in his dad's voice, responded hastily.
"Don't worry dad. The dragons are in no _real_ danger. I can assure you that. I wouldn't carry it out if it was otherwise".

Re was reluctant to accept his son's response."_Wellâ€¦ fine. If you don't mind, I would like to see one of your dragons unlock their Titan Wing"._

"That can most certainly be arranged. It's actually a tradition here", Chris smiled.

"_How so?"_, piped up Aurora.

"It's a rite of passage. It's a test for, but not limited to the adolescents, to prove to the nest that they are not adolescents anymore and want to be considered adults here".

"Interesting. I definitely want to see that", voiced Hiccup.

Then, at that very moment, Serenity and Windwalker returned.

"Ah, how are the dragons? Are they alright?", Chris asked nervously.

"They will all live to see another day", Serenity huffed out tiredly.

Chris suddenly pulled Serenity into a tight embrace. Serenity was shocked at the contact, but returned it happily.

"You don't know how much it means to me, for you to be back in my life. And now, you immediately heal all the wounded. You are so compassionate. I...It's justâ€¦ I missed you dearly Serenity", Chris said softly as he pulled out of the hug, arms still wrapped around her.

"The same can be said for you. Except you don't heal dragons", chuckled Serenity. She would've normally pulled away by now, but she couldn't. Arms still around Chris, she got lost in his eyes. They met gazes and stayed completely still for about 6 seconds, looking into each other's souls. Serenity could see hurt, bravery, warmth, determination, andâ€¦ something else. She couldn't describe the feeling; the warm, fuzzy feeling she felt when being near Chris. Being within 2 feet of him didn't help in the slightest.

Chris, on the other hand, saw innocence, warmth, joy, worry, andâ€¦ something else. He couldn't describe it either. He always viewed Serenity as his best human friend. But now, whenever they were in the same room, he felt something different towards her. He didn't have the words to describe it, but he didn't know what to make of it. He decided he would cross that bridge when he got there. He tried to pull his gaze away, but was locked staring into her beautiful emerald eyes.

All was silent, until Aurora decided it was the perfect time to cough, ending the awkwardness. At that, both Draconian humans snapped out of their daze, and quickly faced the group, adorning identical shades of red on their faces.

"An-anywaysâ€¦ I actually attacked a Song base, that was chock-full of Huo Yao. Let's just say, the fire was splendid", recovered Chris.

"Oh I get it. You are drying them out by destroying the remaining supplies of Huo Yao", Eret started.

"...then, when they go to make more of it, they won't have all of the ingredients, leaving them totally defenseless", Fishlegs continued.

"...and finally end this war!", cried Hiccup.

Chris just stood and smiled. "Wow you guys think fast".

Serenity, though, was completely confused. "What is happening?", she asked puzzled.

"We'll explain on the way", declared Chris as he mounted on Windwalker.

"And where exactly are we going?", demanded Astrid.

Chris faced Astrid and gave her a slight smirk. "Why, we are going to train of course. I can't have my new allies being weak and confused, now can I?"

"We aren't weak! We are strong, brave warriors!", retorted Astrid.

"Then follow me, and prove. me. wrong", retaliated Chris and flew out of his cave, with the others struggling to catch up with him.

11. Chapter 11

Hello everyone. Enjoy this chapter, cuz I decided to write this than do my homework! lol. review please, it would mean a lot to me. Sorry for mistakes.

Chris and Windwalker zoomed through their nest. Weaving through the tunnels of rock effortlessly. They eventually exited another grand cave mouth that opened up to a wide grassy clearing, accompanied by a small creek off to the side. Tall trees surrounded the clearing, concealing the cave mouth from the air. The grass clearing had a few wooden sparring dummies set up at different locations. It was peaceful. That is, until 5 seconds later, Hiccup and Toothless arrived with the rest of the group.

"_You could've given us at least some sign of WHERE YOU WERE GOING?!"_, Toothless puffed out.

Chris cocked a smirk in reply. "Since, you have all so graciously offered to be soldiers in this war, you need to do some basic

training-except for Serenity who will be busy healing dragons. At least, you all should know what you are going to be up against", Chris announced to the party of 20.

Astrid was about to voice her opinion again before Chris beat her too it. "Now some of you may think why I am standing here and wasting my be told, most of you know how to fight".

The group couldn't argue with that. "But the Song are not just an ordinary enemy. They are vast, clever, and always have some trick up their sleeve. It's hard enough to cover my tracks, let alone fight them without them relaying any info that a human is commanding the dragons", Chris started but was interrupted by a growl from Windwalker. "Uh, CO-commanding the dragons", Chris sighed. Windwalker smiled in delight.

"The Song will do whatever it takes to maintain their empire. I have even witnessed them sacrificing innocent lives to uphold their glory. I, for one, plan to end it. After spying on them, I have concluded one thing: they are not your ordinary warriors".

Astrid, being the true viking she was, asked the first question, "What do you mean? What makes them so special?"

"I'm glad you asked that. Their weapons range from jians to meteor hammers to wind-and-fire wheels to many more. All thanks to the empires before it".

Snotlout interjected with amazement, "Wait, there was more of them?"

"Yes, their empire started long before you and I were even born. The very first dynasty was the Xia empire. From then on, it kept changing and growing. And now, we face the Song dynasty. I plan to stop it before more lives are lost".

"_So do you mind explaining these weapons more in detail?_", Tenor implored.

"Certainly!", Chris grinned. Chris walked to the side of the creek. He knelt down and started digging with his hands. He eventually uncovered a long, burlap sack of some sort. He heaved it up with one hand and balanced it on his shoulder. He returned to the group and placed the sack back on the ground, in front of them. He unrolled it and a huge array of weapons of various sizes, lay before their eyes. Everyone, minus Windwalker and Chris, gawked at it in confusion; never seeing weapons so "weird" in their lives.

He picked two up, one in each hand. "This is a jian, and this is a dao", Chris stated, holding up his left, then right hand respectively. "The Jian has subtle distal and profile tapering. It's strong and lightweight, and sharp. The dao is more curved and single-edged, though often with a few inches of the back edge sharpened as well. It's slightly more heavy than the jian, which makes it stronger, but slower".

He threw those aside and picked another weapon up. "I'm sure you know what this is".

"Ooh, ooh, I know. That's a spear. But it looks thinner than the one

I own", Tuffnut blurted out.

"Very good, but around here they are called Qiangs", Chris responded, "I'm sure you all know how to work one. Well, all except the dragons that is". As he finished his statement, he quickly spun around and threw the spear at the closest dummy. It sliced through the air and penetrated the dummy in the chest to his right.

"Are you trying to impress us, cuz it's not working", stated Snotlout.

Chris turned back to the sack on the ground and spoke, "Trust me, that weapon is nothing compared to what else is in this sack". With that, he pulled out another weapon. This one, was interesting to say the least. It was circular, like a wheel. It was a little longer than a foot across. A quarter-segment of the weapon had a padded grip with a cross-guard; the other three segments had protruding flame-styled blades. Not soon after, Chris pulled out an identical one.

"I present to you the wind-and-fire wheels. With one wheel in each hand, the wielder can slash, stab, parry, or disarm his opponent", Chris announced.

"Those look stupid", Snotlout whined.

"Really? You think so? Prove it, show me what you got", Chris challenged. As he said that, he got in a fighting stance.

Snotlout opened his eyes wide in response. He quickly glanced around and noticed all eyes were on him. He shook his head, puffed out his chest, drew out his weapon (a hammer), and charged at Chris. As Snotlout was screaming his viking cry, Chris simply stretched the grin that was already present on his face.

"_Huh, there goes my rider. Trying to prove himself, yet again_", Hookfang groaned.

"_That won't get him far_", mumbled Meatlug.

As soon as the hammer came down with a heavy swoosh, Chris side stepped and sliced through it, effectively separating the head from the handle. Snotlout barely had time to realize he was defenseless before Chris countered and attacked him. Chris "danced" around the bulkier teenager. All that could be heard was the sound of the wind-and-fire wheels slicing through Snotlout's clothing. By the time Chri finished his attack and stepped back, Snotlout's ripped garments fell off his body and landed on the gracefully. All that was left was Snotlout's under-garments, whom the owner quickly covered up with his hands, trying to maintain whatever dignity he had left.

Hookfang dropped his head in defeat and sighed, "_I'll be back you guys". _Hookfang quickly darted towards his rider, scooped him up in his talons, and whisked him away into the luscious forest, saving him from the embarrassment.

Chris recovered from his fighting stance and addressed the group. "... and that's why you don't underestimate these bad boys", boasted Chris as he placed the wheels on the ground to retrieve another weapon.

What he pulled out was what looked to be rope, with something attached to the end of it. Chris also pulled out some type of rock, which he then stuffed into a pocket. "What I am hold before your eyes is called a rope dart. It's a long rope with a metal dart attached to one end of it. The rope dart can be used for twining, binding, circling, hitting, piercing, tightening, and other techniques that I won't bother trying to explain. Excellent hand-eye coordination is a must to fight with this weapon", Chris declared. As he finished his announcement, he let go of the side of the rope with the dart attached to it and started to swing it around his body. He kept on swinging it in all directions, pausing momentarily to manipulate the rope a certain way, causing it to shoot out at a rapid speed. Chris then pulled the rope back and continued swinging it. Chris kept at swinging and striking in different directions, to show the flexibility and volatility of the weapon. As he did this, he danced along the ground, twining and shooting from his foot, knee, elbow, and neck. He then struck another wooden dummy straight in the face, piercing and splintering the wood around it until the metal dart popped out on the other side.

Chris yanked the metal dart back, and caught it with his hand. "Now, what makes this weapon even more deadly, is if it became a meteor hammer", as Chris explained he pulled out the weird-looking rock, which turned out to be a metal weight, and switched out the dart. With the new weapon, he continued his deadly dance and for emphasis slammed it into the ground, leaving an indenture in the earth. He waved and oscillated the meteor hammer in all directions, building up momentum for another strike. He approached another dummy, and jumped into the air spinning, bringing the meteor hammer with him. The weight smacked the dummy in the side of its head, severing it from its body. Chris quickly maneuvered it around his body and directed the weight towards the dummy's chest, sending the latter flying backwards.

"So, does anybody want to comment on the rope dart or the meteor hammer's stupidity?", Chris asked rhetorically.

Everybody was quiet except the twins, who were gawking in wonder.

Ruffnut was the first to burst out, "I wanna have that!"

"No, I wanna have that", Tuffnut shouted.

As soon as the twins started to fight, Chris boomed out, "If you want it so much, take it from me!".

The twins stopped their bickering, and looked at each other. they whispered something to each other and butted their heads. They raced back to their Zippleback, grabbed their weapons (which happened to be their Thornston spears), grinned their iconic, devilish grins, and charged Chris.

Chris slowly spun his meteor hammer, waiting for the perfect time to strike. As Tuffnut raised his spear to attack, Chris backpedaled and swung his weapon at the spear, knocking it out of his hand. Tuffnut, shocked at how quickly he was disarmed, didn't have time to see Chris's boot come into contact with his gut. Tuffnut then fell to the ground in pain. Ruffnut on the other hand, thought that it was the perfect opportunity to strike and sent her spear forward. Chris

noticed the oncoming assault, and dodged it. He then swung his weapon repeatedly, batting away any jabs from Ruffnut's spear. Soon, Tuffnut recovered and assailed him again. Chris, although, had another thing in mind. When Tuffnut was close enough, he manipulated his weapon and it wrapped around Ruffnut's leg. He then jerked it forward, swinging Ruffnut's leg around and into Tuffnut, or more specifically, Tuffnut's groin.

Tuffnut squeaked and fell to the ground for the final time, covering his groin as he recovered from the immense pain. Everybody, even the dragons, flinched in the pain that Tuffnut felt. That, however, did not stop Chris. He unraveled the weight with a pull and swung it a full 360 degrees around him, tripping Ruffnut. As Ruffnut fell to the ground, Chris maneuvered the meteor hammer around him rapidly. The rope speeding up in revolution as the distance grew shorter. Once Ruffnut regained her bearings, the only thing she could see was Chris swinging the weapon above her head swiftly.

Chris forced the weapon high into the sky, extending the rope to its maximum length, before tugging the rope down to Ruffnut's face.

"Nooo!", screamed Fishlegs, who started to run towards them. He, was in vain though, as the weapon collided with a loud "thump". Ruffnut closed her eyes and accepted her unexpected fate. All she heard, was a loud "thump" in her right ear. She looked in the direction of the sound and came face-to-face with the meteor hammer. She then looked up to see Chris extending his hand to her. "Are you still sure you want this thing?", Chris questioned. Ruffnut gulped and shook head, feeling something she hadn't felt in a long time: fear. She quickly stood up and helped her brother to his feet, the latter whom watched the whole scene wordless. As the two walked back, their dragon ran up to them concerned. They nuzzled and licked their respective riders, who hugged their heads in return.

"Don't worry, I have one more weapon to show you", Chris stated as he walked up to the sack once more. He pulled out the final weapon, which seemed to look like the Qiang, but had a thicker, curved blade on one end, and a sharp, pointy counterweight-spike on the other. Accompanying it was a red sash that was attached at the joint of the pole and blade. "The Guandao has a very deeply curved blade and therefore unlike most polearms, solely useful for sweeping cuts where it relies on range and power".

Astrid then stepped up, wanting a little payback for hurting her friends. "Hmm, let's seeâ€¦ A strong, powerful, heavy axe, versus a stick with some metal attached to it. Gosh it's hard to see which one will win", Astrid commented with sarcasm. Hiccup caught himself slightly smiling, knowing that his sarcasm rubbed off on her.

Astrid raised her axe in the air and screamed her valkyrie cry as she ran towards Chris. Chris gripped the weapon tightly and started to clash with Astrid, deflecting her attacks. Astrid extended her foot when Chris wasn't looking and tripped him, sending Chris to the ground. Chris quickly bounced back up and distanced himself. "Wow, I might actually have to take this seriously then", Chris smirked.

This only angered the shieldmaiden and she blindly rushed the antagonist. Chris grinned, knowing he had found her one weakness. He

continued deflecting her attacks, until he was able to hook one the axe's edges with his weapon and disarm her. He placed the guandao on his shoulders and spun around, slamming the side of the weapon against Astrid's back, sending her to her knees. He quickly reverse his spin, simultaneously elongating the side with the blade until he stopped right at Astrid's neck, effectively defeating her. For added measure, he twisted the weapon, making Astrid's throat rest on the blade. They stared at each other for a long while before Astrid sighed in defeat and got back up.

"I will admit though, you are an excellent fighter. Keep it up and you will surpass me one day", Chris said humbly.

Astrid though grumbled in response, picked up her axe, and returned to Hiccup's side.

"Now, who is next?", Chris implored.

Hiccup locked eyes with Chris. He then stepped forward to face Chris, drawing out his sword, Inferno. "I'm not like the others, you know", Hiccup started.

"Oh I know, that's probably why you are the chief. You have to distinguish yourself somehow", Chris interjected.

Chris then withdrew his twin swords from his sheaths and got into a battle stance. "I won't go easy on you just because you are the leader of your tribe. And if you are going to face me, you should get a weapon", Chris cautioned.

Hiccup just cocked a grin in response. "Don't you worry about me. If I were you, I would focus on this thing right here", Hiccup assure as he pressed a button on the grip of Inferno, causing it to spring to its full size and flame up.

Everyone, except the Berk inhabitants, widened their eyes in surprise at Hiccup's weapon. Chris shook his head and refocused himself. "This, is going to be interesting", Chris chuckled as he rushed at Hiccup.

12. Chapter 12

****Hello my fans. Let me just say how sorry I am for missing last week and failing to post a new chapter. I was caught up in school. So to make it up to you, I decided to make this chapter twice as long. I hope you enjoy. And since it is going to be long, it makes it twice as hard for me to see mistakes, so please forgive me for the minor errors. If you happen to notice big errors, please let me know. My eyes are starting to hurt from staring at a computer screen for hours! Enjoy****

Chris ran at Hiccup at full speed, raising his right arm to strike at Hiccup, with one of his swords at hand. Hiccup anticipated his move and swerved to the right. He quickly put distance between himself.

Chris stood back up, eyeing Hiccup. The latter twirled Inferno in his hand, judging where Chris's next move would be. Hiccup, honestly, was nervous about this. He never was one for fighting; he was more of a

talk-it-out type of guy. But still, he was tired of always having Toothless to come to his aid whenever he was in some type of peril. He wanted to at least protect and defend Toothless whenever he could; it was only fair. Plus, he was chief now. He needed to up his fighting skills. He didn't need to be the best at fighting-although he would never measure up to Astrid in terms of fighting- but he at least had to know how to defend himself if he ever was pushed back into a corner.

Chris, on the other hand, was calm and collective. He noticed this was going to be a quick match, considering Hiccup's size. He was actually planning on taking it easy with the chief of Berk. He couldn't just outright humiliate him in front of his subjects, at least not right away. So Chris decided to at least stretch out the spar. He swiftly approached Chris and swiped at him with the sword in his left hand.

Hiccup blocked the attack and ducked, narrowly missing the other sword that came his way. Hiccup failed to see the knee aiming straight for his face, and was too late to react as said body part crashed into him, drawing out an 'oomph' from Hiccup. The chief of Berk was sent backwards but quickly rolled upright and retracted Inferno back into the grip of the blade, and idea forming in his mind. Chris was taken aback by this but before he could gather his thoughts, Hiccup raced towards him. Chris instinctively attacked him and heaved his sword in Hiccup's direction, planning to slam the hilt against him. As Chris did so, he failed to notice Hiccup pushing a button on Inferno, which released some type of greenish gas. Hiccup saw that Chris was about to attack him and dodged to his right to avoid the attack, but Chris quickly swung his right leg back in a 180 degree spin, tripping Hiccup. Hiccup again fell to the ground with an 'oomph'. As he lay there, seemingly defeated, he looked up at Chris, who sighed and shook his head. "Don't make such sloppy moves", Chris commented as he pointed his sword at Hiccup, claiming victory.

Hiccup smiled, "I wouldn't necessarily call Zippleback gas sloppy", and as he finished his statement, Hiccup pressed yet another button on Inferno, which sparked up the green gas.

Chris's eyes went wide as he heard what type of gas it was. He tried to escape it, but was too slow to escape the ignition of the gas. As the sound of a small explosion filled the clearing, Chris was thrown back a good 10 feet. He struggled to stand on his feet. He was shocked, to say the least. He never would have expected that! His train of thought was soon interrupted as he heard the sounds of flames igniting yet again, and looked up to see the sword elongating to its full length and Hiccup charging him. 'He gots guts, I'll give him that, but..', Chris thought as he evaluated his current situation. 'Alright, my swords are out of reach, but I can get to them..just not know. I can't really disarm him, or I will get burned by his sword. Damn, that Hiccup is smart. There has got to be a weakness of sort', Chris surmised. And as Hiccup came even closer, Chris spotted the Achilles' heel. The middle of the blade, or the fuller, was hollow. 'He must've made it that way so it could be lightweight and easier for him to carry', Chris thought. He smirked, 'bingo'.

As this happened, Tenor would sneak glances at Windwalker for a certain amount of time before she would turn in his direction. Then

he would suddenly act like nothing happened until she turned back. Windwalker just disregarded it, and resumed watching the two humans. Tenor, thought that he would go unnoticed, as everyone else was watching the spar. However, he did not realize that Serenity had been watching him from the side of Aurora.

As Hiccup was about to land a blow on Chris's back, he rolled out of the way and sprang back up on his feet. Hiccup continued his flaming barrage. All Chris could do at that time, was dodge and step precisely back with each swipe and swing of Inferno. Without Hiccup knowing, Chris was leading Hiccup to where his swords lay on the ground. The flames danced with each twirl from Hiccup.

As soon as Chris was close enough, he deflected Hiccup's next attack, and pushed him backwards. He then picked one of his swords up with his foot, tossed it into the air, and caught it with his right hand. Hiccup was stunned for a brief moment, until he realized Chris's plan all along. Chris grinned and started his counter-assault on the chief of Berk.

Hiccup swatted Chris with Inferno, trying to create distance between them. Chris spun and ducked out of the way of Hiccup's attack. Then, Hiccup brought his sword down upon Chris. The latter, although, wanted Hiccup to do that. When the blade came down at the right angle, Chris precisely speared Inferno right in the middle, and hastily drew back his own sword, effectively whipping Inferno out of Hiccup's hand, disarming him.

Chris spun around and pointed his sword at Hiccup, ending the spar once and for all. "I will say that blade of yours is a nice piece of work, but it has one flaw. The fuller is missing, but you made up for it with fire and Zippleback gas. Still, if I can disarm you, then they can disarm you. But overall, not badâ€¦ for a chief", Hiccup commented. Hiccup nodded his head and went to retrieve his sword.

Chris turned to face the group. "Thank you all, well most of you, for showing me how you fight. Although you would easily be killed by one of the Song soldiers, there is still hope for you! I can whip you up into shape based on my personal assessments of you!", Chris announced.

The riders on the other hand wore scowls on their faces.

"Anyways, what know?", Valka inquired.

Chris turned to regard her, "Now, we wait. I have an inside man who gives me information about what the Song is up to."

Eret huffed, "An inside man? How did you get a man to betray his own nation?"

"Well, he didn't betray his nation. He was never apart of it. He just so happened to be a farmer north of here. He told me all he had was his farm and his family: a wife and daughter. He lived a happy, modest lifeâ€¦until the Song dominated that region. They destroyed his village, burned all his crops, and killed his family before his eyes. Then, they made him a slave. But, as time progressed, he learned how to defend himself and became a rebellious slave. Some guards wanted to kill him, but one commanding officer liked his

enthusiasm, and made him a foot soldier. When I confronted him in a raid years ago, he didn't attack me and actually begged me to kill him. I thought it would be better to have a spy on the enemy's team so I can get intel on how to stop the Song once and for all, stop all the bloodshed, and win the dragon-Song war", Chris replied.

"Well, that is a really smart move to make", Eret agreed.

"_Wow, I must say, you have exceeded all my expectations I had of you and you make me proud to call you my son"_ , Aurora smiled.

Chris blushed. Even though he was separated from his family and had to grow up on his own, his family still had the ability to make him feel flustered. "Th-thanks", Chris grinned. "I used a mixture of the fighting skills you, dad, and uncle Tenor taught me, along with some techniques I have learned over the years. I'm practically unstoppable", Chris boasted.

"_Really, unstoppable now?" , _Tenor scoffed.

"Well, I haven't met one person who could stop me", Chris added

"_How about dragon?"_ , Re interjected.

"Come on dad. When you first met me hours ago, you saw me spar with 3 dragons. Powerful ones at that."

"_Well, they weren't your dad and I"_ , Tenor smirked.

Chris wasn't that far behind and it clicked in his head. "Come on guys, I don't wanna hurt you", Chris warned, putting his hands up.

"_What do you say son? Care to spar with your dad and uncle?"_ , Re challenged.

"I don't want you guys to be injured, especially at a time like-", Chris started.

"_Ha, like you will even get a blow on me"_ , Tenor bragged.

"Fine, have it your way. Just note that I will not go easy on you!", Chris heeded.

"_What is it with males and them trying to prove they are the best at everything?"_ , Windwalker asked as she padded up to the queen.

Aurora just shook her head and yawned, " _I have no idea. And I most certainly don't want to be involved"._

Windwalker just shrugged and walked back to her original spot. She then lay down waiting for the battle to be over.

Tenor lined up with Re on one side, shifting into a battle stance. Re, underestimating his son, smiled at him. Chris on the other hand had a somber look etched onto his features. "Since I am facing you two, I will not take it easily on you. Don't size me up too quickly, dad and uncle. What you witnessed earlier today wasn't me at my

fullest. I suggest that you give it your all when sparring with me", Chris warned raising his swords into a battle position.

Tenor and Re simply nodded. A dead silence fell upon the group as they waited to see which side would make the first move. The party didn't have to wait too long though, as Chris swiftly besieged the duo royal dragons. Tenor moved first and charged at Chris, keeping his body low to the ground in an attempt to decrease wind resistance. Chris sidestepped, dodging Tenor's claws, and sliding under Tenor's right wing. While doing so, he extended the sword in his right hand, grazing Tenor's armor. Tenor immediately halted and looked behind his back. His armor now loosely hung off of his back spikes. Tenor realized that Chris sliced through the leather holding his armor together at the side. Now his protection simply made any movement difficult for him.

Chris smirked in victory, but soon he frowned as he heard movement behind him. He forgot about his dad! Chris quickly dropped to the floor and held his swords out in front of him, as a makeshift shield. Sparks flew as claws met steel. Re quickly flew low over him and went to Tenor's side, helping him remove the armor. Chris realized that he needed to catch them off guard, if he ever had a chance of successfully defeating his uncle and dad. He got off his feet and rushed his family members.

No sooner had Re removed the last of Tenor's armor, had they seen a glint of steel out of the corner of their eyes. They quickly broke away as Chris came between them. Chris then started swinging his swords around in a mad blitz, trying to find the leather that connect his dad's armor. Re, on the other hand, realized his son wasn't messing around and now took this spar seriously. He jumped, spat fire, and clawed at Chris in an attempt to subdue him. Chris on the other hand expected such from a dragon. But doing so, resulted in having his back turned to Tenor, who took full advantage of that, and swiped his tail at an unsuspecting Chris.

Chris yipped in surprise at the unexpected attack and was launched a good 15 feet away. However, he quickly rolled back up and charged the duo yet again. Tenor saw this and fired several plasma blasts at Chris, who easily outmaneuvered them. Tenor figured Chris would do this and jumped Chris, pinning him to the floor. Chris, though, was not going to be taking down so easily. He briskly threw his swords to the ground and punched certain spots on the forepaw Tenor had pinned him with. Tenor suddenly felt no feeling in his left forepaw and fell to the side, unaccustomed to the unbalance in his forepaws.

Chris rapidly rolled out of the way and punched Tenor in specific areas on his left hind leg, immobilizing him. Again, Tenor felt his leg go limp after Chris' attack. He soon started to panic, not knowing what was going on.

Chris hastily retrieved his swords and rushed Re. The Draconian King flew to his left and shot fire at Chris. He avoided the fire and put distance between them. "_What did you do to Tenor? He can't move"_ , Re asked as he observed his defeated friend.

Chris smiled, "I'm surprised that you don't know, considering the Draconian books you have back at home in the library, specifically the anatomy books. You dragons have a lot of pressure points". Chris then did something unexpected. He connected his swords at the

pommels, and they interlocked with a click. "It's time to move this along. I told you to not underestimate me, and look where that got Tenor. Don't worry, Tenor will regain feeling in about 35 minutes", Chris concluded.

Re then became aware of how his son surpassed him, and that couldn't have made him happier. Re grinned and crouched low, "_Your mom couldn't have said it better. I am joyful that you surpassed any bars that I have ever dreamed of setting for you. I am proud to be your father"_. And with that said, Re flew towards him, beginning another attack.

Meanwhile, Toothless looked on anxiously at the sparring match. He really didn't want his Draconian friends coming out of this hurt. Sure, his opponent was the son of the king and queen of the dragons' homeland. Sure, he would fight in the name of dragons. Sure, he would protect his fellow winged reptiles, but he had just met this human. Even though Chris accepted them with open arms, Toothless did not trust him. At least not completely. He just barely met the guy, not 8 hours ago! This, however, did not go unnoticed by Windwalker.

"_What's got your tail in a bunch? They are just sparring. Nothing bad is going to happen"_, Windwalker scoffed.

Toothless gave her an annoyed look and huffed. "_Don't worry about me, okay? Unlike you, I actually worry about what happens to my friends"_, Toothless shot back.

Windwalker narrowed her eyes into slits at that comment. "_I'm sorry, what was that?"_, Windwalker asked again in anger.

"_You are a Night Fury, you heard what I said perfectly"_, Toothless countered.

"_You need to calm down. Not even a day here and you are already making assumptions about me. You don't even know me!". _At that moment Re fell to the ground in defeat with Chris standing on top of him, with his interlocked swords raised like a spear, claiming victory. Windwalker turned her head back to Toothless, "_Look, the battle is over, and no one is hurt. The only one you should worry about is your rider, Hiccup. Always so paranoid that your precious Hiccup will get into danger. Then again, if I had such a weak, living thing on my back, I'd be worried, too"_, Windwalker chuckled.

That got the rest of the dragons' attention, including Serenity and Chris, who can understand the dragons. Hearing growls, the Vikings' turned to see what the commotion was about. Chris got off of his dad, who quickly rolled right-side up, and both looked at the bickering Nightfuries. Toothless stood up and growled. Windwalker remained laying down and just smirked at him. "_Don't even start with me, Night Fury. I have other important things to focus on than some petty quarrel"_, Windwalker dismissed as she laid her head down.

Toothless roared in outrage and pounced at Windwalker. Windwalker quickly rolled on her back and pushed her hind paws up as Toothless landed on her, deflecting Toothless' attack and sending him into a nearby tree. Toothless hit the tree with a thud and landed on his back. As soon as the stars stopped swimming in his vision, he charged up a plasma blast, but was too late as Windwalker pinned him against

the tree and wrapped her claws around his throat, a slight movement away from ending the male dragon's life.

Opening his eyes, Toothless faced the cold, golden stare of Windwalker. "_I told you once, and now I have to tell you again: do not start something you cannot finish. Less of course, you want to die in front of your friends". _

Hiccup immediately approached the two, raising his hands in front of Windwalker to show he is of no threat. "_Get back, Hiccup. She's dangerous", _Toothless warned, although Hiccup perceived it as a series of short, loud roars.

"_Have you forgotten we are of the same species you ignorant hypocrite. You are just as dangerous as I am"_ , Windwalker seethed.

Chris approached them on the other side. "Windwalker, let this go. There is no need for unwanted bloodshed", he said calmly.

"_I wouldn't say unwanted. He provoked me!"_ , Windwalker exclaimed.

"_You_ _called my rider weak!"_

"_You_ _indirectly called me heartless based on prejudice first. And I told you to stop worrying so much. What did I do wrong?!"_

"_I don't care whoever started it. Let my friend go, Windwalker. Or else we will leave this place, and you will be declared an enemy of Berk and Draconia, and you will have to worry about 2 wars instead of one"_ , Re asserted.

Windwalker glared at Toothless for a bit longer, then released his throat. "_As much as I want to put you in your place, this war is my top priority. I need reinforcements... including you. Be grateful that your friend saved you"_ , Windwalker growled. With that, she took wing and sped off to an unknown area.

Toothless got up and approached Re. "_Thank you, my king, for saving me"_ , Toothless bowed.

Re gave Toothless a hard look. "_Is it true you called her heartless?"_ , the king inquired.

"_No, my king, I did not say thatâ€¦ I said that I care about my friends, unlike her"_ , Toothless replied, getting back up.

"_And on what grounds do you have the right to say that?"_

"_Well, I...I-" , _Toothless stuttered.

"_As I expected, you have no proof that she is anything of the sort. I understand where you are coming from. You do not trust her, and I don't blame you. But don't act on such paranoia. You are an alpha. A wise one at that. A judgmental leader is never a good leader. You know what you have to do to set things right. And I expect that you do it right away, once she gets back", _Re stated.

Toothless sighed in defeat, knowing the King was right.

"Anyways, uh, how about we all go inside and cool off", Chris suggested, trying to ease the awkwardness of the ambiance.

"_Well, what about Tenor? We can't just leave him there"_ , Aurora said.

"Don't worry, I will keep him company until he can walk again", Serenity replied.

"Are you sure?", Chris anxiously questioned.

"Yeah, I am fine. No need to worry. It's only gonna be for 35 minutes, like you said, right? I mean, I healed your dragons. I currently have nothing else to do, so I might as well keep Tenor company", Serenity reassured.

"Okay, be safe", Chris noted, giving Serenity a quick smile before heading to Re.

"Do you mind if you can give me a lift back inside the nest?"

"_Sure"_ , Re responded as he lowered his back, allowing his son to climb up on the saddle. Soon, it was only Serenity and Tenor all alone in the clearing.

"_So, anything on your mind Serenity?"_ , Tenor asked.

"Nothing important really", Serenity stated.

"_Are you sure? Anything at all?"_

"No". Serenity then sat down and leaned against Tenor's side.

"_Okay"_ , Tenor sighed as he enjoyed the view. One way or another, he was gonna find a way to get that specific answer out of her.

A few minutes went by before a light bulb lit up in his head. "_Man, I am so happy that Chris came back into our lives again. I thought he was gone for good, but I am glad I was proven wrong. What do you think Serenity?"_ , Tenor questioned.

Serenity, in response, sighed and smiled. "Yeah, I am overjoyed that he is back in my life again. And now that he's back, I will never let him go, even if it means going to war. Although I wish there wasn't a war to begin with!", Serenity cried out

Tenor's smile softened, "_I know you don't like wars, but this is something we have to do. Not just for Chris' sake, but for the rest of the world's sake as well"._

"I know. It's just, Chris means so much to me. He was my first human friend on Draconia. We always had each other's back. Then, when he was lost at sea, my heart completely shattered. I never really knew loss, until that day. But I had to pick up the pieces. I had to gather strength, when I believed there wasn't any. I had to be happy, for Chris' sake. He wouldn't want me to be sulking all the time. So I made a promise that I would save as many dragons as I can. Because I

don't want anybody to feel the pain of loss, that I felt for the past 10 years of my life".

"_You care that much about him?"_

"Well yeah. He was basically my partner-in-crime. We knew everything about each other; our likes and dislikes, looked out for each other. He always seemed to know what my next move was gonna be, and vice versa. We have a special bond and I am happy that after 10 years of being separated, the bond is still intact. Honestly, he is just amazing. Like, whenever I am around him, I can't describe it, but I feel...well, I feel...different. At first, that feeling was small. But now, the feeling is stronger. The bond is stronger as well, because of it, I think", Serenity sighed, looking off into the distance.

"_I think I know what that feeling is"_

Serenity tilted her head in confusion.

"_...It's love"_

Serenity tensed up at the mention of the word. "L-love?"

"_Yes. You love him, don't you?"_

"Well, Iâ€¦ I haven't felt that kind of love before. How do I know it's real? What am I suppose to do?"

"_This is where it can get complicated. Confess it to him"_

"WHAT?! Confess? No, I won't do that. How do I know he feels the same way? What if he rejects me?"

"_Trust me, he won't. I can tell by the way he looks at you that he feels the same way. And truthfully, how else will you know? Even if he were to reject you- which I am sure he won't- it is better to have loved and lost than to have never loved at all"._

"Thanks, Tenor. I...I will try. But I am holding you to your words!", Serenity called out.

"_What do you mean?"_, Tenor asked, not liking where this was going.

"You know what I mean. Don't act like I didn't see you eyeing Windwalker during the sparring matches", Serenity smirked.

Although Tenor didn't show it, he blushed under his black scales.

"_I-I don't know what you are talking about"_, Tenor dismissed.

"Oh, come on. There is no need to hide it, Tenor. I mean, if you can figure out my love life, it is only fair that I figure out yours", Serenity beamed.

"_Fine, alright. I may or may not like Windwalker, okay? I'm not certain it's love, as I have just met her, but Iâ€¦ cannot deny I feel...something towards her. I swear by the god Draco himself, if you so much as tell _anyone_ _else about this, I'll-"_, _Tenor threatened.

"Don't worry, your secret is safe with me. But let's make each other a promise. We will both attempt to find out if our respective crushes feeling something towards us, deal?"

Tenor exhaled heavily, "_Deal". _

The rest of the 35 minutes was spent with the two playing small games or chatting about the surrounding nature. Once Tenor regained his feeling in his forepaw and hind leg, he took Serenity back into the mountain nest again. He dropped her off where the injured dragons were.

"_Go check on your patients. Make sure they are doing well. I will be back"._

"And where exactly are you going?", Serenity simpered, half-knowing what he was about to say.

"_I am going to find and talk to her. I want her to at least get to know me before she hates me"_ , Tenor chuckled.

"How can anybody resist a handsome fellow like yourself?", Serenity replied.

"_I guess we'll find out"._ With nothing else to be said, Tenor took flight and headed out of the mountain nest, determined to find and converse with Windwalker in the immense forest.

13. Chapter 13

****Hello to you all. I hope you like the story so far. And I'm sorry that the story has no good action yet. But don't worry, the story will get better next chapter! And I promise that! ... again, sorry for the small errors.****

Tenor soared through the skies, trying to locate the female Nightfury. After scanning the forest, he found her a few miles east of the Mountain nest; she was settled on a rocky outcrop, overlooking a wide, shallow valley. The outcrop itself was hidden by the numerous trees. He landed a good 15 feet away from her, slowly padding towards her.

"_Look, I don't know who you really are and what you want from me. But what I do know is that, if you value your life, you would leave me alone right now"_ , Windwalker sighed.

"_Why do you threaten me? Like you said, you hardly know me. Plus, you said you need reinforcements, soâ€¦ if there is a reason why I can't be here.."_ , Tenor trailed off.

"_If you had to keep fighting a war for about 14 years, I'm pretty sure you would grow suspicious of everything around you. Especially when the enemy are not dumbasses like other archaic tribes around these parts"_ , Windwalker said, turning to face Tenor. "_But that still does not answer my question, 'why are you here'?"._

"_You didn't ask me any question at all", _Tenor replied.

"_Yeah I did, I-"_ , Windwalker choked, recalling that the mysterious Night Fury hybrid was right. Windwalker let out a frustrated sigh, "_You know what I mean". _

"_Well, I came here really to apologize on Toothless' behalf"_ , Tenor conjured, thinking of a subject off the top of his head.

"_Oh, you mean that sucky excuse for a Nightfury"_ , Windwalker seethed, "_If he is such an excellent leader as your party claims, why couldn't he just tell me himself. Oh wait let me guess, his pride got in the way"_. _

"_He... is stubborn at times, but he has a good heart. He will come around later. Knowing he did something wrong and not doing anything at all to reprimand it, will eat at his conscious",_ Tenor answered hesitantly, trying to come up with an answer to a question he did not expect.

"_So basically, you just lied to me; knowing he would come to apologize to me, yet having the audacity to deceive an alpha by claiming you are apologizing on his behalf"_ , Windwalker surmised.

Tenor blushed in embarrassment. 'Damn, she is good', Tenor thought.

"_So, do you want to tell me the real reason why you found me?"_ , Windwalker asked.

Tenor exhaled, "_I just came here to talk.."._

"_Talk? What is there to talk about?"_

"_Well, how are we suppose to trust each other if we don't even know each other?"_

"_You make a good point. But how do I know you won't break that trust?"_

"_You don't know. You have to take that chance. And besides, that can go either way. How do I know you won't deceive me and just sacrifice me to win a war?"_ , Tenor shot back.

Windwalker paused at that comment. She was slightly taken aback. She then curled her lips into a slight smile. "_Well it looks like you proved yourself to be smarter than I thought you'd be"_ , Windwalker replied honestly.

Tenor scowled. "_Gee thanks"_ , he answered sarcastically.

Windwalker chuckled, "_Don't get your tail in a bunch. I'm just trying to lighten the mood"._

"_Well, the mood seems to be lightened"._

"_Does it now?" , _Windwalker teased.

Tenor just rolled his eyes and stared out into the valley. He approached the edge of the outcrop, marveling at view in front of him, "_I must say, this is actually a pretty nice view. Does it look

better from the sky?"_

"_No, it looks nicer from down here. Sometimes, the sky doesn't offer what the ground has", _Windwalker said casually.

"_If you don't mind me asking, what is making you stay here? Truly nobody wants to fight in a war",_ she added.

"_Well, you heard Re. We are here to help. Even if we hadn't have reunited with Chris, we still would have helped"._

"_How? No dragon has ever heard of you guys around here"._

"_If what you say about the Song is true, then word would've spread to the homeland...eventually"._

Windwalker breathed out, "_Well, I can't be mad at you for being honest"._

"_No dragon has to suffer. Especially at the hands of mankind. They are such a paranoid race; killing or neglecting whatever they don't are only some exceptions like Chris, Serenity, and people of Berk that beg to differ"._

"_I wouldn't be so sure of that. Everyone, dragons included, have to suffer. Whether it be mentally, emotionally, or physically. I have met people who deserve to have justice be brought down on them. And as an alpha, I have to be judge, jury, and sometimes executioner"._

Tenor gasped, "_You've killed others of our kind before?!"_

Windwalker rolled her eyes. "_Don't tell me you've never heard of or seen a bad dragon before. I don't know what they teach you at that kingdom of yours, my prince. But the world is not as peachy and joyful as you make it out to be"_ , Windwalker scoffed.

"_So that justifies you killing them? Secondly, I am not a prince", _Tenor huffed.

"_Yes, yes it does. It's called vengeance. I can't stand by and watch as wrongful act goes by unpunished, albeit human or dragon. Why should I be the one to suffer? I'm tired of sitting back and ignoring a problem that's right in my face. If the problem doesn't resolve, I will make sure it does. It is my right as an alpha to do so. Think about it , Tenor. How do I know that a defeated foe, won't return to cause more problems again? How else would you suggest that I bring down the Song empire? I can't take that risk. As I put it, 'burn the rope. Do not simply cut it'. Do you understand?...And besides, when people are emotionally aggravated, they tend not to think straight and usually have one thing on their mind:revenge"._

Tenor sighed_, "I see your point. But killing shouldn't be the first choice. It should be a last resort. Not just a simple means of ending a disagreement"._

"_Whoa, whoa. Slow down. Don't jump to conclusions. I never said I kill on a whim if anybody disagrees with me. That would get nobody anywhere. That would make me a tyrant, and that would make my nest

fear me, instead of respect me."_

"_That's, very wise of you",_ Tenor commented.

"_It better be. I'm an alpha of course. But don't use the word 'wise'. It makes me feel old"._

"_Well you do not look old. You look young and well for your age",_Tenor complimented.

"_Are you implying that you were checking me out?"_, Windwalker teased.

"_What?! No- I was just-"_

"_Oh so now I'm not attractive enough to catch the eye of a male, am I?"_

"_OOOOOH", _Tenor moaned, collapsing on the ground.

Windwalker broke out into complete laughter."_Haha. It's fine. I'm just giving you a hard time. If it makes you feel better, you're not that bad-a-looker yourself", _Windwalker grinned.

Tenor blushed. 'Did she really just said I wasn't bad looking?', Tenor thought.

He was broken out of his train of thought as he heard Windwalker calling his name. "_I'm sorry, what?"_

"_I said I haven't had a good laugh in a long time. Thank you Tenor, you really got me out of my bad mood this evening", _Windwalker smiled.

"_An-anytime"_ , Tenor blushed. Without knowing it, his 'something' towards Windwalker grew stronger. What he did know, was that Windwalker appreciated his company. Now all that was left to do was confirm if she was going to value his company all the time. "_Soâ€¦ can I consider you my friend?"_, Tenor asked hesitantly.

Windwalker thought it over for a moment, then pulled a smirk over her face. "_Sure, but on one condition.."_ , and with that Windwalker spread her wings and power-climbed her way to the clouds, "_Keep up with me!" _

Tenor was shocked to say the least. He clumsily unfurled his wings and rushed after her.

The sun was setting as Windwalker made her way back to her and Chris' designated cave, where the rest of the group was waiting. She landed with a little out of breath, but overall wasn't tired. However a few seconds after her landing, Tenor zoomed in and landed horribly, drinking in large gulps of air.

Re took notice of his friend's current state. "_Tenor, what happened?!"_

"_Let's just say that your..._our_ _friend here should work on his flying skills some more", _Windwalker chuckled.

Re gave Windwalker a puzzled look. 'Did she just say friend?'

"Anyways, now that we are all here, we can discuss what will be going on tonight at the meeting point", Chris announced, changing the subject.

"Yes, you said we all were going to fly out to the location and keep guard in the air and on the ground, while the exchange is taking place", Valka stated.

"Now even though he is on our side, he still isn't quite that used to dragons, so please act calm and mature", Chris asserted, mainly to the twins.

"_Wh-when, when is this...going to..happen?_", Tenor asked between breaths.

"Tonight, when the moon is highest in the sky. We will fly out in a couple of minutes to make sure we get there in time. If we don't make it, he will assume that we were planning to turn him in or something", Chris replied.

"Since we are apart of this war now, what is he gonna tell you? I mean you already have the map to a vast quantity of an essential ingredient to Huo Yao", Astrid asked.

"He will be telling me, hopefully, about the whereabouts of their emperor, named Gaozong. My strategy is...simple. Take out their powerful ruler and one of their important ingredients to a weapon they heavily rely on. They will be reduced to mindless ants. Once we do that, we basically win the war", Chris said sternly.

Chris took everybody's momentary silence as his cue to continue. "Alright, now that we all know the plan, are we ready?"

Chris received a bunch of nods from his comrades. Soon, the group made sure they had their weapons ready to go and that they were all clear on what their roles were in the upcoming interaction. Then after that, they took off into the skies, going northwest to the designated location, with the setting sun at their sides.

14. Chapter 14

****Hey guys, sorry for uploading late, again. I just had a lot of homework and assignments. not to mention PSAT and all that jazz. But anyways, this chapter is twice as long, and since I am barely uploading this at like 2 in the morning, I am really sleepy and probably have some spelling/grammar mistakes. If they are big ones, let me know...****

The group all flew silently to the meeting point in silence. The darkness coating their skin and scales respectively. The cool breeze nothing but a reminder that what they were going through wasn't a mere illusion, but a hard reality. After about an hour or so of silent flight, they had reached their destination. They all landed quietly landed on the ground below them.

Although it was dark, Re was able to make out most of his

surroundings before they landed. They were on a steep cliff on the side of a tall mountain. Once they landed, they were surrounded with nothing but fog. Below that cliff was a depth so low and so deep, all that could be seen was a cold, grey fog. The fog was so thick, that only the humans could see a few feet in front of them. Across the fog was another cliff that belonged to yet another mountain that only a dragon with the keenest of eyes can make out. In Re's view, all he could see was a thick blanket of grey with the peaks of mountains jutting out like spikes before his descent.

Eyeing his surroundings cautiously, Re stepped closer to his mate protectively, unsure and unused to the shady environment. Aurora smiled a grin of gratitude.

"So, what now?", Valka asked in her calm voice.

"Now, I give the signal", Chris solemnly responded. Chris then scanned his surroundings meticulously, gazing hard at the ground, looking for something. Seconds later, he found two hand sized rocks. He picked them up, one in each hand. He then moved to a flat log a few feet away from him, and started doing something peculiar. He started banging on the log as of it were a drum. His rocks tapped a certain pattern on the dead tree, before Chris stopped.

"Whatever you do, do not move. Whatever you hear or see in the next few seconds, do not move!", Chris said with urgency, "Just stand still".

Suddenly, a volley of arrows came out of nowhere and narrowly missed the group. Everyone was startled and went into defense mode. The group began to move into a defensive circle.

"Stop moving!", Chris shouted to the group

Reluctantly and tensely, did the group refrain from action. Some more arrows came flying towards them. They all narrowly missed the group. The dragons held back their growls and snarls. A few seconds later, a blur could be seen in the fog. The silhouette formed into the shadow of a man. Then, the actual man was close enough that he could actually be seen; it was the informer, the inside man.

The man timidly and nervously took a step forward, not used to the large group of Vikings and dragons instead of just Windwalker and Chris.

The man, wore brown leather armor. Under that, he wore a yellowish/beige tunic with dark colored pants that stopped right below the knees. He had brown moccasins and black leggings. He had leather arm guards that went up to the elbow. He had long, black hair tied back in a single ponytail. He had a round face, almond-shaped, brown eyes and a black moustache accompanied by a small goatee.

He was kind of short for a man. But the dao strapped to his side said otherwise. In his left hand was a bow, and strapped to his back was a quiver full of wooden arrows. He had a neutral expression on his face as he eyed each and every one of the dragons and humans.

Chris held up his hands to show he still did not mean any threat to him. That didn't ease the strange man's nervousness. Then Chris did another unexpected thing that day, he spoke in a foreign language,

unheard of by the dragons and the Vikings.

"Biǎ© dǎ•nxǎ«n Caito, wç' bǎ¹ chǎ«mǎ i nç•. Zhǎ"xiǎ" ǎ©wǎ i de, bǎ¹ shǎ°xǎ« de rǎ©n jiǎ¹jǎ-ng shǎ- shuǎ- fǎ"nxiçžng wç'men jǎ-bǎ i sǎ²ng dǎ-guǎ³ de mǎ¹biǎ•o, yǎ>shǎ- wç' de mǎ©ngyç'u", he spoke calmly.

"Nǎ me, wǎ"ishǎ©me bçž suç'yç'u de rǎ©n dǎ•u lǎ;i cç• jiǎ•oliǎ°? Shǎ-bǎ¹shǎ- zhǎ"n de yç'u bǎ-yǎ o ma?", the man nervously responded.

"ǎ^, shuǎ• lǎ;i huǎ zhçžng, dǎ n nǎ xiǎ" lǎ³ng de kuǎ«jiçž shǎ- wç' de jiǎ•rǎ©n; qǎ-yǎ° de dǎ•u shǎ- tǎ•men de pǎ©ngyç'u; tǎ•men xiçžng gǎ"ng duǎ• de liçžojiǎ> zhǎ" chçžng zhǎ nzhǎ"ng. Tǎ•men shǎ- zhǎ-dǎ© xǎ-nlǎ i de. Wç' fǎ•shǎ-, wç' de shǎ"nghuǎ³ hǎ©", Chris reassured.

The man calmed down after that, but that didn't mean he wasn't puzzled. He exhaled the breath he didn't know he was holding in. Everyone was puzzled at the weird language that was being spoken in front of them.

"What, was that?", Re cautiously asked his son.

However, the man was startled at Re since all he heard was growls. Chris quickly picked up on the man's anxiety and held his hands up to him.

"Yǎ o lǎ>ngjǎ-ng!", Chris asserted.

Chris rapidly spun around. "Okay, since Kang-Jie here does not understand Norse or dragon language, I will be the only one to communicate with him. That being said, we cannot scare him away. We need him. And since he is kind of anxious around newcomers, especially dragons, please keep all talk to an absolute minimum. In fact, try not to talk at all when he is around. Got it?", Chris announced to the group.

Everyone looked at each other and nodded. Hiccup, on the other hand, still had one question on his mind. "What language was that?"

"That was chinese, my friend. It's a hard language to learn in my opinion, but give or take 10 years, you tend to pick it up", Chris explained. Chris was about to turn around when an idea reoccurred in his head. "Oh yeah, since you are my allies now, you deserve to know what we are conversing about. I will translate our conversation", Chris finished as he turned to face Kang-Jie.

"Qç•ng wç' de pǎ©ngyç'u, nç• yç'u mǎ©iyç'u shǎ•ujǎ- dǎ o shǎ©nme xǎ-nxǎ«?", Chris questioned.

"I just asked him what information he gathered for us. The other dialogue was just me greeting him and me calming him down", Chris relayed to the group.

"Then what was the whole arrow thing about?", Astrid suspiciously asked.

"That is his way of proving trust. If you can not flinch and run away when you are in potential danger, you prove yourself a strong

warrior. Oh, and by the way, his name is Kang-Jie".

"He still looks tense", Eret commented.

"Hmm, all right. I want you all to bow"

"Why?", Ruffnut asked.

"Look, bowing in their culture shows that you respect and are formally greeting the person. Just do it okay.", Chris huffed.

The whole group slowly bowed to Kang-Jie. "LÇæ lǎ́'ng shǎ- wç' de fǎ́qǎ«n, shuǎ- qiǎ hçžō shǎ- lǎ́'ng de gǎ́'xiǎ•ng zhǎ« wǎ;ng. Lǎ;n sǎ́ de shǎ- nçšwǎ;ng. Yuǎ;nhuǎ; , hǎ́'isǎ́ de lǎ́'ng shǎ- wç' pǎ́ngyç'u de lǎ́'ng, shuǎ- qiǎ hçžō shǎ- zǎ i tǎ• suç'zǎ i dǎ-qǎ« de lǎ́'ng ǎ•'ǎ>rfçž. Gç"shǎ²urǎ°chǎ; i de rǎ́n zhǎ n zǎ i tǎ• pǎ;ngbiǎ•n de shǎ- tǎ• de tǎ́ngbǎ n, shuǎ- shǎ- qiçžohǎ© de shǎ- tǎ• de rǎ́n de shç'ulç•ng.", Chris said while bowing. After witnessing the event, the man lost all suspicion he had for the group and bowed in return. After doing said action, he chatted away excitedly.

"What is he saying?", Hiccup asked confusedly.

Chris chuckled, "He is saying how honored he is to not only dragons bow to him, but to have 3 kings and 1 queen show honor to a lowly man like him, as I have just explained. He said he would've brought honor to his family if they still lived."

Chris continued his conversation, telling Kang-Jie how he was able to obtain the scroll and what lies in it. After he was done speaking, Kang-Jie bore a serious, yet demeanor. Chris changed his facial expressions numerous times. At last, he wore a somber demeanor.

"I can't believe it..", Chris trailed off.

"What happened?", Fishlegs asked worriedly.

Chris sighed in anger, "The Song have captured basically everything on this land. The last and only thing standing in their way, is my nest, my home. So now, they have focused all of their attention and effort on eradicating us".

"So you're saying-", Hiccup began.

"That obtaining the map was a complete waste of time. Because even if they were to have their fuel source got off from them, they can still destroy us? Yeah", Chris seethed.

Chris and Windwalker were visibly shaking, either out of rage or worry. Chris turned back to Kang-Jie, bowed, and thanked him for his services. However, Kang-Jie drew out his sword, light punctured the dirt and knelt on knee, with his left arm behind his back. "Qç•ng rǎ ng wç' wǎ́'i nǎ-n fǎ°wǎ¹. Rǎ°guç' wç'men sç•le, wç' nǎ-ngyuǎ n sç• zǎ i nç• shǎ"nbiǎ•n zhǎ ndǎ²u, bǎ¹shǎ- zǎ i tǎ•men de shç'uzhǎ•ng", he uttered.

Chris stared at Kang-Jie in admiration.

"What happened?" Snotlout asked, the unsheathing of the sword primarily prompting him to ask the question.

"He-he wants to fight with us now. He would rather die beside us than be a coward", Chris spoke in awe.

Chris spoke his gratitude but had a better idea in mind. After relaying his thoughts to Kang-Jie, the latter bowed in understanding, bowed to the rest of the group, and departed into the fog.

Once the man was out of sight, the dragons began talking again.

"_So much for keeping talking to a minimum_", Re said to Hiccup.

Hiccup's words got caught in his throat, leaving his mouth wide open. At last, Hiccup just shrugged his shoulders, failing to come up with an explanation.

"_What now?_", Tenor asked Chris, asking the question that was on everybody's mind.

Chris thought hard about that question. Windwalker and Chris exchanged glances and then they both nodded. "I will give an answer tomorrow morning. Right now, we need to get back to the nest and rest", Chris declared. Soon, all the riders mounted up on their respective dragons and took wing into the night sky.

Everyone arrived back at the nest quietly, as to not disturb the sleeping dragons. Chris showed them to some extra caves they could occupy for the duration of their stay. After everybody settled down for the night, the drifted off to sleep. The Draconians, minus Chris, had their own cave; Valka, Hiccup, Astrid, and their dragons had their own cave; and Skullcrusher, Barf and Belch, Meatlug, Hookfang, and their respective riders had their own cave as well.

After an hour, Chris and Windwalker slowly and quietly flew out of the cave, failing to disturb Chris' family from slumber. They silently flew into a tunnel that led out of the mountain nest.

They landed on the sparring ledge where Chris first met his parents. Chris sat down, dangling his legs over the ledge. Windwalker plopped down next to him and let out a sigh.

Both of them just sat there, staring out over the forest, listening to the calls of the night. It was a good 15 before Windwalker broke the calm silence.

"_Why can't we just have a simple life? Why can't I just settle minor disputes like other _dragon alphas?_", Windwalker complained.

"Because you, my friend, are special. Though right now, it may seem like you are special in a bad way, it will go in your favor soon enough", Chris soothed.

"_You know, after listening to what Kang-Jie had to say, I can honestly think of no battle plan, no strategy that can turn the tide in the war. Even if we were to take out their main ingredient of Huo Yao; even if we were to take out Gaozong in one swoop, I don't think we can prevent the inevitable", _Windwalker replied glumly.

Chris turned to face his dragon companion, a shocked look on his face. "Don't tell me you are giving up. Don't be pessimistic. We can do this", Chris started.

"_I am not being pessimistic. I am be realistic. I am weighing all the choices I have, all the consequences. And nothing seems to work in our favor"_

"How does taking out Huo Yao and Gaozong not work in our favor?"

"_As naive as this may sound, I am worried about the little things right now. I just don't want to get my hopes up. Both of us know very well, no matter how successful we are, it will always come at a price. I justâ€¦ I just don't want to lose anymore people. I am tired of seeing death every week. And now that you brought your family into this, I don't want to be responsible for their deaths. I don't want to be the cause of their misery"_

"Look, I know it sucks, okay? War is never a good thing. The repercussions are even worse. I know that I shouldn't be asking you this, but suck it up and face it head on. We can either go down swinging or not putting up a fight at all".

Windwalker sighed, "_I can only hold in so muchâ€¦"_

"...and that's okay", Chris said, holding Windwalker's head in his hands. "Nobody is expecting you to be perfect. It is totally fine to let it all out once and awhile. In fact, I am surprised you haven't done it in front of me before. I mean, can I not be trusted? I thought we were family", Chris stated, looking away from Windwalker.

"_We are! We are! You know I love you. I would do anything for you. It's just that i didn't want to overwhelm you with my feelings. I didn't want to push you away with all the problems I have encountered in my life. I-"_

"Well that's unfair. You comforted me when I first missed my family all those years ago. You were the only one who consoled me and told me to raise my head high", Chris chuckled.

"_Life sucks, Chris. It sucks so much and I hate it. I-"_, Windwalker could not finish her sentence, as she broke down and warbled sadly onto Chris shoulder. For the first time in her life, she let it all out. All of her pent up stress and worries flowed out of her and into the night.

"Shhh. It's okay Windwalker. I love you, and I will always be there for you. Don't you forget that", Chris assured as he hugged and patted Windwalker absolutely.

Windwalker continued moaning and groaning in despair and pain. Chris just tightened his grip around Windwalker all the more. Then the duo just sat there. Windwalker inhaling and exhaling ragged breaths as Chris pressed his head into Windwalker's neck, hugging her tight.

After what seemed like an hour, they finally broke their hug and rested their heads against one another.

"_What would I do without you"_ , Windwalker sighed.

"Go crazy probably", Chris laughed.

"_But seriously, what are we going to do?"_

"Well", Chris exhaled, "I have an idea. Although you would absolutely hate it"

"_Considering our options, I am kind open to anything right now"_

"Well, I was thinking the only way to ensure victory for us, was to take out their Huo Yao supply camps and Gaozong at the same time. If we were to not do it concurrently, we would surely lose, considering that the enemy would become suspicious and fortify their defense to defend the other we chose not to attack."

"_Okayâ€|"_

"Since the supply camps are so numerous and massive, it will take a lot of people to help destroy them. And realistically, it will only take one person to kill Gaozongâ€|"

Windwalker's eyes opened wide at that comment. "_Oh no no no. If you think for a second that you will go in there aloneâ€| No, out of the question", _Windwalker stated.

"Peace comes at a sacrifice Windwalker. Sometimes we have to make the hard choices"

"_Well what if we __don't __have to choose the hard choice? You answered it yourself; I would go crazy without you. We have a bond unlike anything else. If you were torn apart from me, Iâ€| I just wouldn't have a reason to live"_

"But I know you Windwalker. After all the hardships you have faced, you have proven to not only me, but to others that you are a strong dragon. In fact, you are probably the strongest dragon I know!", Chris exclaimed.

"_But I can't lose you Chris. You mean a lot to me. After losing my family, after being betrayed by Syrikâ€|. I just can't. Pleaseâ€|", _Windwalker begged.

"Windwalker, I know I shouldn't have asked you that question. In fact, I would be thinking the same thing you are. But think about it, really think about it. It's either you save one or thousands, possibly millions."

Windwalker gazed into her rider's eyes. She didn't want to admit it, but Chris was right. She just sighed yet again and rested her head against Chris. "_Just promise me one thing: we will cross that river when we get to it"._

Chris sadly smiled, "Deal".

Unbeknownst to them, they were being watched. A certain black dragon with only one tail fin silently observed them. Toothless frankly did

not know what to make off the situation. First off, his sensitive ears heard the light flapping of Windwalker. His curiosity and suspicion of the two got the best of him, and followed them on foot until the opening. Then, he decided to blend in with the shadows and watched the scene unfold before him. 'What happened to Windwalker's parents? Who is Syrik, and why would Chris want to sacrifice himself? Is it worth it?', Toothless pondered. He simply figured he would have to ask at a later time. He turned around carefully and went back into the tunnel toward his designated cave. However, he didn't see the leaves to his right and lightly stepped on them, making a faint crushing noise with his hind paw. Toothless tensed, 'Aw crap'. He didn't have time to finish the thought as something strong and sturdy tossed him across the ledge and pinned him down.

Before he could roar out in surprise, and a pair of arms kept his mouth shut, as well as two scaly arms pressed down on his windpipe. Cut from air, Toothless could only thrash around in the struggle.

"_Stop fighting now. Or would you like to be the second Night Fury I have killed", _Windwalker spat with venom.

Toothless stopped struggling for two reasons: 1) he kinda owed it to them, considering the fact that he did eavesdrop on their private moment. 2) he wanted to know what in the name of the dragon god, was Windwalker talking about.

"Windwalker stop", Chris commanded. Windwalker, with much struggle, pried herself off of Toothless's throat, and let me sit up and regain his breath.

Toothless coughed as he sat up. "_You are really trying my patience you insolent, naive-", _Windwalker said harshly.

"What my friend is trying to say here, is why were you spying on us?"

Toothless looked down at his paws, feeling guilty.

"_I swear to Draco, if you do not answer-", _Windwalker fumed.

"_Honestly, I came to apologize for earlier today. Really I was. I saw a glimpse of you flying out of the trunk, so I thought it would be a perfect time for me to apologize to you. Then you and Chris had your moment...and my curiosity got the best of me"_ , Toothless replied, looking at Windwalker with soft eyes.

Windwalker on the other hand, simply boiled further. "_Well let me just say, that after what just happened, you will never get to say your apology, nor will I accept it. How dare you! You are suppose to be an ally. That doesn't give you the right to do whatever the hell you want! You are very lucky I am not kicking you and your group out of my nest! Seriously, this was something personal, between me and Chris, and you just had to ruin it. How would you feel if someone did that to you and Hiccup?! You would be pissed, right?"_, Windwalker scolded.

Toothless just sat there, listening to Windwalker's beratement. As much as Toothless did not want to admit it, but she was

right.

Windwalker got right in Toothless' face, golden orbs met green orbs. Toothless felt the dead stare of Windwalker, boring into his soul. "_How about this, if you swear not to bring up anything that has transpired this night, I will not kill you and banish your group from my nest. Deal?"_, Windwalker threatened.

Toothless stared at Windwalker for a couple more seconds, before he hung his head low. "_Deal"_, he said ashamedly.

"_Now get the hell out of my sight"_, Windwalker stormed.

Toothless turned around and made his way into the tunnel. Before he enter the mouth of the tunnel, he turned around one more time and gave Windwalker a sad look before he silently dashed in the tunnel.

Windwalker exhaled and turned back to Chris. The latte just shrugged his shoulders. "What are you gonna do?", Chris asked rhetorically.

"_I have a few options in mind"_, Windwalker growled, flashing her teeth.

"Well, promise me you won't kill any more dragons until after we win the dragon-Song war. You need to focus on this, okay?" Chris optimistically asked.

Windwalker closed her eyes and breathed out. She opened her eyes and nodded. Then, Chris mounted Windwalker, and they both took off into the trunk of the Mountain Nest, with nothing on their mind but sleep.

15. Chapter 15

Hey guys. Sorry for the day-late upload. I was tired from events this past weekend. Anyways, I hope you enjoy. This chapter is short, but is a chapter worth reading regardless. Again, sorry about the mistakes; I barely get sleep anyways and I stare at a screen basically all do so... yeah.

The next morning, all the dragons in that nest were awake and about the nest, chatting, going out to fish, or contrarily sleeping. All except the Draconians and Vikings of course!

Tenor was the first to get up. He yawned and stretched his wings. As he smacked his lips, he decided that he was hungry, but he did not want to go alone. So, he decided it was best to wake the rest of the dragons who in turn, would wake their respective humans. He flew to the caves that the rest of the party resided in. First, he woke up his fellow Night Fury, Toothless.

"_Toothless, come on, wake up"_, Tenor spoke as he nudged Toothless. The latter of which groaned in response. Tenor kept poking Toothless until the alpha dragon annoyedly opened his eyes.

"_For a dragon, you should know that one should never disturb a sleeping dragon"_, Toothless half growled, half yawned.

"_Well considering that we are in the middle of a war, I don't see any chance of a dragon actually getting sleep, considering that one would focus on winning the war instead of getting his beauty rest"_ , Tenor shot back.

Toothless sighed, "_Since you woke me up, wake up the other dragons. Chris is suppose to tell us something once we awake"_.

"_You got it"_ . At the conclusion of that remark, Tenor zoomed off to the other caves. 'I guess I will eat later', Tenor thought.

After 20 minutes, all the Vikings were in Windwalker and Chris' cave, yawning and looking grouchy.

"Do we really have to get up now?", Ruffnut complained

"Yea, I wanna beat up my sis later, not before the sun comes up", Tuffnut whined. He was rewarded with a punch to the gut, courtesy of his sister.

At last, Tenor was left to wake Chris and Windwalker. Tenor approached Windwalker cautiously. Even though they formed a bond of friendship, she was still an alpha. A female alpha-which meant she could be twice as angry and power than any other dragon if she wanted to. Tenor lightly padded his way over to the sleeping pair. When he got a closer look, he couldn't help but stifle a chuckle.

Right before his eyes, was Chris sprawled out against the side of Windwalker. The female alpha on the other hand, had one of her legs twitching in the air. Both rider and dragon snored and slept to their hearts' content.

Tenor slightly pushed against Windwalker, gently waking her up. Windwalker groaned sleepily. She looked around, trying to find out who had disturbed her from her slumber. When she found out who that person was, she blushed. She was less than a foot away from Tenor's snout. She turned quickly away, embarrassed.

"_Uh-uh, what are you doing here?_", Windwalker asked.

"_We want to know what Chris' plan was, and since he told us he would tell us this morning, we decided to gather here"_ , Tenor said, looking straight at Windwalker.

Windwalker shook her head again. "_Yeah. Let me just-_", Windwalker started as she faced her human and started to poke at his belly.

Chris groaned, "5 more minutes". As he spoke that, he lay down on the skin-covered cave and draped Windwalker's wing over him.

Windwalker just rolled her eyes and yawned again. She then grabbed Chris' leg with her tail and pulled him out from under her wing. He dangled helplessly in front of Windwalker.

"Ah, wha-? Windwalker, let me down", Chris said tiredly.

"_Sure"_ , Windwalker smirked as she dropped Chris to the ground. The

immediate contact with the ground instantly woke him up. Instead of yawning like the rest of the people in his nest, he simply moaned in pain.

"Windwalker, what the hel-", he started.

"_You needed to wake up. So I decided to give the experience of the wake up 'alert'. The 'alert' worked perfectly in my opinion"_,
Windwalker smirked.

"Ahhh, but still. A simple rough shove would've done the trick",
Chris grumbled, "But now that I am up, I have can tell you what our next move in the war will be"

The whole group leaned in, eager to hear what parts they would play during the war.

"Even though, they vastly outnumber us, that doesn't mean they outmatch us. This group, along with some of my dragons, will accompany you in taking out the Huo Yao resources. You cannot, I repeat, you cannot, leave anything behind. Got it? If you are still confused, I will explain it more in detail.

"So does that mean?", Tuffnut asked excitedly.

"Yes, you can have fun and destroy stuff. Just don't die or get captured", Chris sighed.

The twins cheered and butted their heads together in joy. Chris just rolled his eyes.

"Do we, um, really have to destroy everything?", Fishlegs questioned uneasily.

"Yes. From the guards, to the defenses, to the actual components of Huo Yao. Everything must be destroyed. We cannot risk any chance of Gaozong finding out about this. We have to do it practically under their noses"

"Is it necessary to kill people?", Fishlegs nervously asked.

Chris gave him an annoyed look. "What are you, 5 years old? Yes we have to kill people. We are in a war for crying out loud!"

"But some people are innocent!", Fishlegs retorted.

"I don't know about you, but I care about dragons. They are just as much people as you Vikings are. They only thing different about them, is that they can fly, breathe fire, and have scales. From what I have seen, humans are the real monsters. They pillage and take everything they want, without considering the implications! Dragons can coexist with nature and don't resist it. However, man thinks he can control nature when it is so much the opposite. As far as I am concerned, they have proven to be more humane than my own kind. They are truly people. I would side with them over my kind anyday".

"Not only that, but have you not realized that there have been innocent dragons who have died on my side before? Have you ever held a baby dragon in your arms, trying to sooth its pain as you watch it slowly bleed to death, knowing you cannot do ABSOLUTELY NOTHING ABOUT

IT!? In war, terrible things will happen. Whether you want them to or not, one must accept it and cope with it. Lives will be lost, innocent or not. That is the price of war. So I suggest you pick a side, before I choose for you", Chris seethed.

"Got it?"

"Go-go-got it", Fishlegs stuttered, frightened out of his mind.

As dark as that comment was, Re was slightly proud of his son's speech. Aurora was happy that her son was so brave and strong, but was worried about Fishlegs. Her son didn't have to be so harsh. Valka sided with Chris, knowing well how it was like living with dragons for 20 long years.

Chris turned to face his audience. "The plan itself will have to be done quickly, as to not give the enemy time to raise suspicion and form a counterattack. The actual camps themselves are large, heavily fortified, and heavily defended. I have never attempted this before, but considering the dragon power -and Viking power- we have, we can definitely pull this off. There are a total of 10 camps, scattered throughout many mountains, northwest of here. The goal is to eradicate 2-3 bases each day. After that, we can focus on defeating Gaozong", Chris announced.

"_What is the plan?"_, Tenor asked anxiously, already excited for battle.

"First, the Night Furies will power dive and blast the major weapons out of the way. Then, a group of dragons -let's say 30 to 35- will surround the base and attack inwards. They can handle their own just fine, but as a fail-safe, Windwalker will call out the order to summon their titan wing. I estimate it should take us 40 minutes to destroy one Huo Yao camp. Heck, if we do better than expected, I will divide our entourage and we could possibly take out two camps at the same time! But the factor that determines whether this plan will be successful or not, is if everyone does their part accordingly. We cannot afford a survivor to go and alert a nearby camp, or to leave such obvious destruction that it could attract the attention of a surrounding camp".

"Look, I am going to ask you all this one time, and one time only. Do you wish to continue? I know this may seem a lot to do, but it is something that has to be done. In order to preserve the survival of the dragon race, and possibly the Viking race, we must overcome any inner conflict and dish out damage that may burden us for the rest of our lives. If you do not want to fight, I...I understand. No one is making you do anything. I admire that you all choose to stay here and help me and my nest. I thank you all. No one will stop you from leaving. But think about your dragon before you finalize your answer."

Everyone stopped what they were currently thinking, and contemplated their decision. After some brief chatting and discussion between the Berkians and Draconians, they all went silent. Eret looked around and nodded, unknowingly accepting the role of being the momentary advocate of the group.

"You know, if my past self would look at what I have become today, he would've been disgusted. But I can clearly see, I was wrong from the

beginning. I was wrong for bearing a prejudice against our reptilian friends. They personally, have proved to me they are wise, caring creatures. Stormfly here actually risked her life to save me, and she didn't even know me! That alone was enough for me to stand up for them and fight to my last breath, defending such honorable creatures. We, the people of Berk, will be more than happy to offer what we can to win this war, and defend our friends!", Eret declared triumphantly. The rest of the Vikings and dragons yelled and roared in agreement.

The Draconians all bore smiles and nodded at Chris and Windwalker. Chris looked around at his allies, proud that even though they barely knew each other, they were willing to sacrifice themselves to protect dragons.

He bore a proud grin, "We leave at sundown".

16. Chapter 16

****I AM SO SO SO SO SO SO SORRY** for leaving you guys in the dark for like 3 weeks now! I honestly did upload the chapters to the site, but I FORGOT to post the chapters to the actual story! I honestly did not know this! The only reason I found out that my 15th and 16th chapter of Change were not posted was because one of readers alerted me saying I haven't posted anything in a while. Naturally I looked at my story and it said that my most recent new chapter was chapter 14! :O:O:O I sincerely apologize. I have updated chapter 15 about 30 minutes ago and I now just uploaded this chapter. But never fear! I will not abandon this story and the weekly updates will continue! I just need to remind myself that just because I uploaded it to the site, doesn't mean I updated to the story! Anyways, I hope you enjoy the story so far. It is not getting to the good part. Enjoy!**

The sky bore an orange face as the sun met the horizon. Streaks of purple and blue laced the atmosphere, preparing for the day's end. A huge group, composed of a majority of the mountain-nest dragons and the Berkian-Draconian party, were waiting patiently on one of the numerous ledges, anxious to start the battle plan. Only a few were not able to go; those being dragons who were previously injured, the young, and certain dragon caretakers whose sole purpose was to help take care of the ones left behind. Dragons and humans alike were reviewing their roles. Idle chat filled the air, until a single roar silenced it all. They all turned their attention to the origin of the roar; eyes and ears were focused on the female Night Fury alpha and her rider who was perched on her back. Both stood valiantly, waiting until all attention was on them.

"Today is the day we can stop watching our brothers and sisters die at the hands of the explosive black powder. Today is the day, where you can avenge your fallen loved ones. Today is the day that WE FIGHT BACK!", Chris declared.

The group roared in agreement, their emotions starting to get the best of them.

"Today, begins the expedition of eradicating all of the Song's main power supply. Once we cut them off, they would not be able to stand on their own two feet!"

Again the crowd roared in approval.

"We will strike the first supply camp of Huo Yao when the moon is high in the sky. We will decimate everything we see. We will rain fire upon the ones who have ravaged us so!"

The crowd roared louder, fueled by their overwhelming need for revenge. Aurora and Re looked at their son proudly, highly satisfied at how Chris was able to motivate a dragon militia.

"_He really has grown up_", Re sighed, looking at his mate and queen, Aurora.

"_True, but he still is our hatchling. I am his mother, you are his father. We are his parents, no matter what anyone says!_", Aurora exclaimed.

"_I am not disagreeing with you. What's the matter?_", Re asked, curious as to why his mate was fretting.

Aurora exhaled."_It's just that, you can never stop a parent from worrying. Even though Chris is more than capable of taking care of himself, I don't want him to be taken away from me. I don't want to see him die. I don't want to let him go. Even more so, now that he has been re-introduced back into our lives. As a mother, I am suppose to protect my child from any and all harm, yet here I am, letting my son commandeer a group of dragons into war. Is that wrong of me?_"_

Re smiled and nuzzled Aurora lovingly until they rested their snouts against each other. "_I understand your worries, but as parents we not only have to worry about our children, but trust in them as well. You said it yourself-Chris is more than capable of taking care of himself. Even though we are suppose to protect and give support to our hatchlings, we do not control them. We simply guide them and teach them the basics of life. They have to endure the rest of it once they reach maturity, and even then, that should not stop us from caring about him, protecting or assisting Chris. And right now, I could not be a prouder parent. Not only has he been able to care for himself these past 10 years, he has been able to take care of an entire nest! Do not worry Aurora, I can guarantee you that Chris knows what he is doing", _Re said reassuringly.

Aurora closed her eyes, absorbing her mate's words. "_You, are right. It's just hard to comprehend how mature Chris is. Even though he is an adult, I still see that happy, troublesome kid"._

"_I know what you mean. When I see him, my mind still sees him as the hatchling he once was even though he is far from the case. It constantly juggles the two. I guess only another parent could understand what I mean"._

Aurora chuckled, "_Tell me about it"._

At that moment, Chris concluded his speech. The militia was anxious to leap into the sky.

Chris dismounted Windwalker, turned to his right, and came across the one person he meant to say goodbye to, Serenity. Before he was able to utter a word, Serenity approached him swiftly and wrapped her arms

around Chris' neck. Chris was slightly surprised but returned the tight embrace nonetheless. They held the tight hug for a while, basking in the growing bond they shared. Serenity pulled back somewhat, eyeing Chris. "Please be careful Chris. I don't want to lose you again. You mean a lot to me",

Chris blushed, "I will never, ever leave you again Serenity. I promise you that".

They stared at each other intently, their faces unconsciously moving towards each other, specifically their lips. It seemed inevitable, that is, until a certain black dragon, with golden eyes, coughed to get their attention. At the sound, Chris and Serenity released how close they were to each other and immediately pulled away from each other, as if nothing happened.

"I-I will try to treat any minor wounds I can. Ultimately, I will send for you if there are any major injuries, if need be", Chris stammered.

"Got it. Be safe", Serenity cautioned.

Chris nodded as he mounted Windwalker again. Windwalker roared, signalling the militia to rise into the sky. Once they were in the air, Windwalker did a quick check over her dragons while Chris checked over his allies. They both nodded to each other when they noticed that everything was in order, and turned to the direction of the first supply camp and flew onward. The rest of the group followed hastily.

The wind nipped at the riders' faces. None of them cared though. They all were focused on destroying the first camp. All except Hiccup that is.

Hiccup had conflicting thoughts running through his head. Yes, he did want the dragons to win this war, but why must there be bloodshed? Why can't they just peacefully negotiate some type of arrangement with the Song? He doesn't see himself as a killer. Then again, talking didn't really solve anything. It certainly did not change Drago's mind, and look where that got him!

Toothless crooned in worry, noticing his rider's tension. Hiccup looked down at him, smiled, and patted him on the nose.

The militia flew for another hour or so, until they reached the first supply camp. The camp itself was a clearing in the middle of a massive outcrop of trees. It was about 100 yards wide and 200 yards long. The camp was outlined with 3 rows of wooden walls. At each corner was a lookout tower. Torches were evenly spaced along the tops of the walls. Scattered strategically throughout the camp were various weapons, ranging from cannons, to mortars, to giant crossbows. In the middle of the camp were huge metal tanks, filled to the brim with Huo Yao. Filling up the rest of the space were tents, housing numerous Song troops. Overall, the camp was dangerously and heavily defended.

The dragon militia flew high and around the camp, making sure that they could not be seen from below.

"_Wow. Huo Yao must mean a lot to them_", Tenor commented.

"The stuff makes up their whole artillery. Without it, they are defenseless", Chris said.

Windwalker led the group right above the middle of the camp. Chris signaled the group to stop. They all hovered in mid-air. Windwalker turned around, making sure everybody was set before the plan was enacted. She nodded at her fellow Night Fury brethren making sure they were set as well. Once they confirmed that they were ready, she let out a low, but audible growl, signaling the start of the 2 ½ Night Furies climbed up to a higher elevation and once they deemed they were high enough, stalled in the air. Once gravity pulled them back down, they nose dived straight towards the supply camp. As the descended, the tell-tale Night Fury whistle should've been heard, but it was not. Just before they took off, Windwalker and Chris showed Hiccup, Toothless, and Tenor a little trick that she used on the Berk raid to eliminate the Night Fury dive bomb whistle. The trick was simple; all you had to do was do a barrel roll going down. One had to start off slow and keep their tail perfectly stiff, or else that would mess up the dive entirely and possibly end their life.

The Night Furies pulled off the maneuver precisely as no air was allowed to hit their sub-fins long enough to generate the whistle. As they spiraled down towards the camp. The rest of the group made a circle and spiraled downwards. As the Night Furies built up their first plasma blasts, they made sure not to hit the Huo Yao tanks first, as the ensuing explosion would potentially hurt the rest of the group.

About 250 feet from the ground, the Night Furies fired their first shot and sharply pulled out of their dives. The plasma blasts dug into the ground before they ultimately exploded, destroying surrounding tents, and heavily damaging some nearby weapons. This alerted the camps to the sudden attack, but before they could get organized, the rest of the militia zoned in.

The slower dragons attacked first and took out the nearest weapons and towers. If one of those dragons were to get caught, one of the faster dragons would cover the immobilized dragon and help him out. Once a majority of those outer defenses were gone, the heavier dragons moved in to take care of the stronger defenses. Those said dragons were the ones with either the most or hottest fire.

The Night Furies' main job was to make sure the gave help wherever help was needed and that nobody got hurt. Tenor quickly destroyed a huge crossbow that was about to finish off a greenish dragon that had previously been struck down by that weapon. He helped that dragon get to safety. Hiccup and Toothless weaved their way through the camp, destroying the soldier's weapon storage whenever those soldiers headed there to grab a sword or spear. The Berkians and their dragons all landed and began fighting with the Song troops. They took out about 30 troops altogether. Chris and Windwalker on the other hand were able to take out 40 Song troops by themselves! Chris sliced his way through those troops with his dual-locking swords, while Windwalker clawed and slashed her way through. They were focusing on finding the camp overseer.

Fire could be seen all around the camp as it was being burned to the ground. Screams, wood splintering, and fire roaring filled the air. Windwalker and Chris were covered in the blood of the Song troops.

Breathing heavily they scanned the camp, looking for the overseer. At last, Windwalker spotted him, leaving in a horse-drawn, wooden carriage. Chris ran to the carriage with Windwalker closing in behind him. As Windwalker easily surpassed Chris, the latter instinctively mounted Windwalker mid-run. Windwalker pulled up to the side of the carriage and rammed into it with all her might. She separated the cart from the horses, sending it flying across the air. At the same time, the Vikings and dragons finished destroying the defenses and wiping out the troops. As they finished up, they noticed Chris and Windwalker stalking up to a broken carriage, where a man crawled out from under the wreckage.

The man, clad in armor, was puzzled to see a young man, standing beside a threatening dragon. He initially didn't know what to make of the situation, until he got his bearings straight and withdrew his sword.

"NÇ• zÃ>nme gÇŽn liÃ;nxiÇŽng dÃ o zhÃ"xiÃ" wÃ« wÃ¹. NÇ• jiÃ•ng zhÃ«fÃ¹ de gÃ•ngjÃ- gÃ"!", the man yelled before rushing at Chris, ready to kill him.

Chris simply smirked and raised his swords, blocking the overseer's first attack. Soon a small battle commenced between Chris and the overseer. Sharp yells, and the clashing of swords could be heard from the man as he annoyingly could not land a single blow on Chris.

Re and Aurora saw the battle out of the corner of their eyes and rushed to go help their son. As they approached the battle, Windwalker held up her wing, preventing Chris' parents from interfering. Re was about to shout at Windwalker before she spoke up first.

"_Don't worry. He can easily overtake this man. Just watch"._

Re reluctantly shut his mouth as he and Aurora uneasily observed their son fight a deadly man.

Chris maneuvered around his partner, avoiding, deflecting, and blocking the overseer's attacks. It culminated in the overseer and Chris struggling for the final blow as both of their swords met in the middle. Unfortunately for the overseer, Chris's swords could come apart, so Chris swiftly divided his swords into 2 and spun around the man. This caused the man to stumble, as he had all his strength aimed forward. As the overseer fell forward, Chris sliced through the back of his knees with the bottom sword that made up his deadly sword-staff. This caused a cry of pain to be emitted from the overseer as he dropped his sword and fell down to his knees, effectively disabling his ability to walk.

Chris came around and faced the overseer. The overseer hung his head in defeat, stunned that he was beaten. Chris roughly pulled the man's hair back, forcing him to look Chris straight in the eye. The overseer's frightened look met Chris' deadly gaze.

"This is for all the dragons you have slain in your life, you pathetic excuse of a man", Chris spat right before he sunk one of his swords through the man's chest.

Pain and shock adorned the overseer's face as he realized his fate. Chris made sure his eyes were on him as he watched the overseer's

life drain from his body before he hung limply on Chris' blade. After a few seconds, Chris withdrew his sword and watched the body thud lifelessly to the ground.

All eyes were on him as he took the overseer's life. The mountain-nest dragons were itching with excitement at their current victory.

"Do not celebrate yet my friends. We still have to take out their power supply", Chris asserted, gesturing to the tanks.

The group got the memo and flew high into the sky, avoiding the blast range. The only ones left on the ground were the Night Furies. They were also assigned with destroying the tanks, as they were the only ones fast enough to out-fly the debris once they exploded the tanks. They quickly zoom climbed their way up before they shot back down at twice the speed, their signature whistles could now be heard. They quickly fire plasma blasts into the tanks before they hastily zoomed back up.

As soon as one of the fire bolts hit the tanks, the whole sky turned yellow as a percussive boom filled the air. The explosion was so great that the shock wave disturbed some of the Night Furies' flight. Fortunately, the Night Furies were able to rejoin the group.

Windwalker and Chris roared proudly at their victory, with the rest of the group joining in quickly. Afterwards, they headed to find a place to settle down for the night and regain their energy. All seemed right with the group except for Hiccup. The only thing that kept only playing in his mind was the sickening sound of metal puncturing flesh as the overseer watched his own life fade away before his very eyes at the hand of Chris.

17. Chapter 17

Hello my readers, let me just say how sorry I am for not uploading the last two chapters. Since I usually upload chapters in the middle of the night, I must have assumed that when I uploaded a chapter to the site, it would automatically upload that chapter to the story. Boy was I wrong! I probably would not have noticed if it wasn't Serenity Dragonrider, a loyal reader and author, who let me know that I had not posted a chapter in a while. I was curious as to what she meant and when I checked my story, the most recent chapter was the 14th one! I am so so sorry to keep you waiting. But needless to say, the weekly updates will commence once again. I never thought I would update 3 chapters in one week! Have fun reading and as always, forgive my mistakes...

2 weeks have passed since the dragon militia took out the first Song supply camp. They traveled all around the East part of the continent of what would now be named Asia. They destroyed 3 other supply camps within those weeks. Nothing was left behind to indicate that dragons destroyed those camps-the aftermath of the explosion of the Huo Yao tanks could easily been mistaken for damages done by dragons. They were currently on their way to wipe out the last Huo Yao supply camp.

The militia flew in multiple V formations towards the last camp. They

always flew at night as they could be easily discovered in the daylight. The Berkians and Draconians flew in the lead V. Re and Aurora were on either side of their son and his dragon, the latter being at the head of the formation.

Aurora was slightly anxious. "_Are you sure the Song will not know that we have attacked them?"_

Chris turned and faced his mother, "Well, I cannot say that they will not consider that we were responsible for the attacks. But what I can say is that since their empire is so vast, they could have been taken down by a rebellion of sorts from either surrounding Song-captured villages or Song slaves".

"So what are you saying?", Hiccup asked from behind Re.

"What I am saying is that they are so arrogant, that they could be taken by surprise from anything. All they can do is consider every possibility. And on top of that, they shouldn't think of us as a major threat. All they know is that we have been defending ourselves against them for the past 10 years, they don't know that we are currently on the offensive"

Chris looked ahead and continued, "But still, that should not stop us from reaching our goal".

Everyone agreed with that and silently flew on to the supply camp. After 30 minutes or so, they reached the last Huo Yao camp. The camp itself was different from all the others. It was on top of a big hill, giving the Song the advantage of high ground. Not only that, but there was a lot of air defense weapons. One could say that the Song took no chances with this base and made sure this would be the hardest to raid.

The group then flew high into the clouds, as to not risk being seen by the soldiers at low altitude, considering they still had the high ground advantage. They broke through the clouds a minute later, maintaining their V formations. They were now hovering above the camp, covered by the clouds. The dragons themselves were puzzled as to how they would attack the camp. In response to their uneasiness, Windwalker turned around and gave a small bark, silencing the militia.

"_Do not fear my brothers and sisters. Even this base is structured differently, we are more than strong enough to wipe this camp off the face of this planet", _Windwalker said.

"How do you plan on attacking this?", Snotlout asked, "I don't know if you saw, but they have a lot of weapons that can shoot us down easily."

"I hate to say it but, Snotlout has a point. We are going to have to think out the box with this one", Hiccup commented.

Chris thought about it for a moment. "You are right Hiccup. We will have to do something different with this attack. Thankfully, I already have a plan", Chris smirked.

"Ready to have some fun, Windwalker?", Chris asked his companion. Windwalker just gave her rider a puzzled look.

"Listen up. Since this base is a bit different from the others we have attacked, we are going to try something different. Something you should be familiar with. I want everybody in Titan Wave formation", Chris announced to the militia.

The mountain-nest dragons regarded Chris's comment with shock with bewilderment. They haven't used that formation in ages.

"_Well what are you waiting for? You heard him. Move! Now!", _Windwalker barked to her dragons. Those dragons scattered in the air, finding their place in the formation.

The Berkians and Draconians on the other hand were confused. They had never of this formation before.

"Move to the back of the formation and line up with a dragon in front of you and next to you, and just follow our lead", Chris ordered. The group hastily did as they were told, seeing as how this was their only option.

The formation was simply an organized, floating rectangle of dragons. Once the formation was set, Windwalker moved to the front of the formation. Then, her scales started to glow blue, activating her Titan Wing. After she was completely covered from head to toe in blue light, she looked out over the rectangle. "_Activate your Titan Wing now!", _she commanded.

The rest of the group did as they were told. They all started change. The dragons morphed into their final forms. That is, all except the dragons of Berk and Draconia.

Stormfly looked towards Toothless, puzzled. "_Why aren't you activating your Titan Wing? Out of all of the dragons on Berk, you are the only one who can do it"_"

The dragons of Berk and Draconia all looked towards Toothless, wondering the same thing. Toothless felt those dragons' eyes on him and released a breath in defeat.

"_The last time I did that was when Hiccup was threatened by the Bewilderbeast. Ever since then, I have not been able to summon it again. I have tried but, I have failed each time"_, Toothless admitted ashamedly.

"_If it means anything, none of us have been able to activate our Titan Wing"_, Re consoled.

The dragons of Berk looked at them, shocked.

"_No offensive my queen, but haven't you?"_, asked Meatlug

"_None taken. Even though we wear crowns upon our heads, we are no different than you all. Unlocking the Titan Wing is a very hard process to do. It all happens at different times in our lives in different circumstances. And the fact that Windwalker has found a method of unlocking the Titan Wing for dragons interests me. Perhaps when this is all over, she can help us all unlock ours_"_, Aurora suggested.

"_Sounds like a good plan"_ , Belch agreed, while Barf nodded simultaneously.

At that moment, Windwalker's pact finished changing into their Titan Wing forms. "_Alright then, let us shift the tide in this war!_", Windwalker growled as she dove through the clouds. The rest of the pact roared their battle cry as they followed suit.

The Song soldiers were in for quite a surprise. At first they heard the one roar of a dragon. All of them rushed out of their camps to see where it was coming from. Initially they were perplexed to see one glowing blue dragon with a rider on top. But then, their expressions turned into one of pure horror as they saw the numerous other dragons breaking through the clouds.

The ones who were nearest the giant crossbows, net throwers, etc. quickly loaded the weapons and fired at the onslaught of dragons. Alas, their attacks were in vain. The boosted dragons were able to swiftly dodge the oncoming attacks with ease and quickly rained down fire on them.

From a third person point of view, the militia flew in downwards and arched over the base. At that point, the first line of dragons unloaded their fire onto the Song, roasting anything in their way. Then as the first line pulled upwards to 'reload', the second line of dragons would pick up where they left off, and the pattern would continue. If not all of the camp was completely consumed by fire, the first line would pick up where the last line continued and the process would repeat until the whole base was dominated by conflagration. It looked like a tsunami of scales and fire.

The Song, however, realized that they were doomed once they saw the assault of dragons destroying their base. Some chose to stay and die until their last breath. Others, really a majority, decided to flee and save their own skin. Those certain individuals ran from the base, towards the surrounding wilderness in various locations.

"Mom, Dad, Tenor! You and your Berk allies search and destroy any escapees south and east of here", Chris barked to his family.

"_I want everybody else to kill any Song that are fleeing north and west of here. Move!_", Windwalker ordered to the rest of the militia.

Everyone then split up, in search for the runaways. Dragons would scan the immediate and nearby area for any Song soldiers, then they would swoop in and take the kill. Tenor, always itching to fight bad guys, was able to kill 3 troops. Re and Aurora worked as a team to kill 4 soldiers. The Berkians on the other hand were doing fine. They searched the trees for any Song soldiers. Hookfang, Cloudjumper, and Stormfly were able to kill a soldier each before they could not find any more soldiers in their area.

Chris looked to his right and saw one man heading in a different direction, apart from the others. He was constantly looking back at the base, before he disappeared, under the cover of the trees.

"Hiccup, you can take care of that, right?", Chris asked Hiccup.

"Uh, yeah, no problem", Hiccup stuttered.

"Good. Just stay calm, and you can do this easy", Chris advised before he and Windwalker took off in another direction.

Hiccup and Toothless went after the soldier, eyeballing the ground for any suspicious movement. Suddenly, Toothless spotted something out of the corner of his eye. He swooped in, zigzagged between the trees, and threw a plasma blast at the Song soldiers feet, knocking him to the was then able to pin the soldier to the ground, where he snarled menacingly at him. scaring him. Hiccup was about to order Toothless to kill the soldier, but then he looked into his eyes. Much like when he held the dagger above Toothless those 5 years ago, he hesitated. When he looked into the eyes of his enemy, he saw the very same fear he saw in Toothless' eyes when he was about to kill him. He paused for a moment, reflecting. Toothless maintained his demeanor, but was slightly anxious as to why his rider did not command him to do anything with the enemy yet. Then Hiccup uttered a command that Toothless himself did not fully comprehend.

"Let him go Toothless"_. _Hiccup whispered.

Toothless turned to face his rider with a look of shock and concern. Had he just heard him right?

"Toothless. Release him.", Hiccup reiterated.

The dragon alpha crooned his puzzlement, wondering why his rider refrained from killing the enemy. "_But Hiccup, I-""

"Toothless. Let. Him. Go. Now!", Hiccup demanded.

Toothless, paused for a moment, then with much effort released the man. The soldier quivered in terror, scared and shocked that a dragon spared his life.

"What are you waiting for? Go!", Hiccup asked rhetorically.

The man seemed to snap out of his stupor and ran as fast as his feet could carry him. Hiccup watched him leave the area, unsure whether he made the right move or not. Then, as he exhaled, beckoned Toothless into the air, returning to the camp. As they flew, amidst the noises of war, he whispered in Toothless' ear, "Please bud. Do not tell anyone what has happened here, alright?"

Toothless looked up at his rider with sorrow, then warbled his compliance and focused back on the flight.

"_Hiccupâ€|. I hope you did the right thing, releasing that man",_ Toothless sighed.

"I hope I did too bud", Hiccup groaned.

As they returned to the camp, the rest of the militia was already gathered there, waiting for the last of their group to return. As Toothless landed, Chris came up to them and regarded the two. "Well Hiccup, did you eliminate him?"

Hiccup steeled himself. "Yes, I took care of it", Hiccup lied.

"Splendid! Once we finish eliminating the Huo Yao camps, we can enact phase 2 of the plan", Chris rejoiced.

"Phase 2?", questioned Valka.

"Yes. You see, since we are now on the offensive, I figured we can devise a plan to take out Gaozong. So, as we were destroying this base, I was able to locate one of Gaozong's men", Chris explained as Windwalker showed them a muffled-and-bound Song commander.

"He will tell me all the information I need to know", Chris said.

"And if he doesn't?", pressed Astrid.

"Trust me, he will", Chris chuckled darkly as he faced the commander, who in turn, gave Chris a death glare.

The prisoner of war shouted something at Chris, but was muffled by the cloth tied around his mouth.

"Oh will you shut up", Chris complained as he went up to the man and punched him square across the jaw, knocking him out.

"Well, it seems like we are done here. Let's move on", Chris said as he loaded the commander on a different dragon's back.

Seeing as how there was nothing left to do, the militia launched itself into the sky, and took off to find a suitable place to set up camp. Windwalker, Tenor, and Toothless-with their riders of course-stayed behind to ignite the tanks of Huo Yao.

As the consequent explosion engulfed the air, Hiccup's conscience slowly started to eat away at him. He was having second thoughts about releasing that soldier. But it was too late to do anything about that now. He faced the direction the soldier last took off in. Seeing as how the soldier would be long gone by now, Hiccup closed his eyes and sighed in defeat. He shook his head clear, and decided to focus on the bigger picture-taking out Gaozong and ending the dragon-Song war.

18. Chapter 18

****Hello all! I hope you all like this chapter. I have been stressing out about all the assignments I have this month, as well as a 4000 word paper I have to write. But I figured I could procrastinate that and write fanfiction instead lol. Enjoy and forgive me for any mistakes I made. ****

The sun was going down the following day when the militia arrived at the bottom of a valley, surrounded by many trees. The local wildlife scattered upon their arrival. The group landed next to a wide, tall cliff. They were all very tired and most of them settled down quickly and knocked out, tired from yesterday's events. The dragon who was carrying the prisoner landed next to Windwalker. Chris then dismounted her and approached him. He picked the prisoner up and heaved him on his shoulder. He then patted the dragon, thanking him for carrying the extra weight. The dragon in turn growled his welcome and wandered off to find a suitable place to sleep.

Chris then placed the prisoner against a tree, and tied him up with some extra rope from one of Windwalker's saddlebag. He struggled against his bonds and groaned his displeasure.

"Shut it. I'll deal with you soon enough", Chris chastised as he point a finger towards his prisoner.

Even though Chris did not speak Chinese at that time, the prisoner had a good idea what he was saying, and reluctantly bit his tongue.

Chris smiled when his prisoner complied. He then returned to his family and allies, who thankfully built a fire. He settled next to Windwalker, tired as well.

"I must say, you guys know what you're doing when it comes to fighting. I thought I would have to save you guys at one point or another. I am glad you all proved me wrong", Chris complimented to the Vikings.

"We're Vikings. It's in our blood", Snotlout said proudly. The twins cheered in agreement and butted their heads together.

"_What's on the agenda for tomorrow?_", asked Tenor as he yawned.

"Well, after we are well-rested, tomorrow, I will see if I can pry any information out of our prisoner, Fen-Chi. Once that is done, we will form a plan to take out Gaozong once and for all, and ultimately ending the dragon-Song war", Chris explained.

"So tomorrow the rest of us will basically do nothing?", Astrid pondered.

"You can count grass for all I care. From this point on, we can't do anything unless I get something out of Fen-Chi".

"_Well I am going to do something that will benefit the pact,somewhat. And it involves you two", _Windwalker stated, looking at Re and Toothless.

Re and Toothless both eyed Windwalker confusedly, then looked at each other, hoping the other had an answer.

"_And why do you need us two specifically?_", Re asked suspiciously.

"_You two are alphas, correct?_"

Both male alphas nodded simultaneously.

"_Well I noticed that you did not activate your Titan Wings during any, specifically the last, of the attacks on the supply camps. That led me to believe either you were really stupid and wanted to die yesterday...or you have not activated it yet". _

Toothless looked to the side, embarrassed how an alpha like himself could not summon his Titan Wing so easily like the mountain-nest dragons.

"_Do not worry. If you have not unlocked it, it is nothing to be ashamed of. Very, very few dragons can unlock that final stage on their own. Luckily for you two, you have me. Just like I have done with the dragons at the mountain-nest, I will do with you two; I will help you unlock it"_ , Windwalker described.

"_I am curious about that. How have you been able to unlock all of those dragons' Titan Wings?"_ , Aurora asked.

"_It's a process really. I would explain it now, but I am tired. The reason I chose Re and Toothless is because they are alphas. They are the kings in their own regions. I figured they got that position because they are the strongest, either physically, mentally, or whatever. If they weren't strong, they would not have earned the alpha position. The stronger a dragon is, the easier it is for him to unlock it. Making it easier for me to unlock it"_

"_I have never heard of a dragon who can unlock Titan Wings", _Meatlug commented.

"_I understand if you don't believe me now. But tomorrow you will witness first-hand how I do it. If you still don't believe me then, then that's your problem, not mine. Now let's get some sleep"_ , Windwalker said as she laid her head down. Chris lay against her side, falling asleep too. The rest of the Berkians and Draconians followed suit since nothing else could be done until tomorrow.

The next day, everybody was awake and doing predictably nothing. After Chris ate his breakfast, he dragged Fen-Chi across the ground and into a small cave he found while catching his breakfast. The cave was secluded and dim. It had tall stalagmite-like pillars in the cave. Chris tied Fen-Chi to one of those pillars. From the outside, no one could see the pair.

"Alright, I will come out once I gather enough information", Chris spoke. Once he disappeared into the cave, the group turned around and headed off. "Oh yeah, and if you hear anything disturbing, don't mind it", Chris added as he darted back into the cave.

"What does he mean by that?", Hiccup asked Re.

"_I believe you know what he means Hiccup", _Re replied.

Hiccup nodded in understanding. They all followed Windwalker to a small clearing near a different section of the wide cliff. She turned around and faced the group.

"_Alright, everybody except Re and Toothless, please stand back"_ , she announced to the group, with Re translating.

Once everybody was a respectable distance away, she beckoned the two alphas to come closer to her. Once they did so, she spoke to them in a firm, yet quiet tone. "_I am warning you now. My methods come off as 'extreme' and 'dangerous'. You may not like what I have in store for you. But the reward of being able to use your Titan Wing whenever you can makes up for it in my you both trust me enough? Will you help me help you?"_

The two alphas looked at each other yet again, and turned to her,

nodding.

"_Good_", Windwalker smiled. She turned to the rest of the group. During her small chat with the alphas, a number of the mountain-nest dragons had come to spectate what was about to happen, knowing full well how the process works.

"_You are all about to witness the change. This male Night Fury, much like myself, is a strong warrior. He too wants to obtain his Titan Wing to summon as he pleases", _Windwalker announced.

Toothless was caught off guard and blushed, both by the sudden compliment and that he did not get a say in if he wanted to go first or not.

Windwalker turned to him, "_Please step forward Toothless", _Windwalker demanded.

Toothless did as he was told and stood in the middle of the clearing with the mountain-nest alpha.

"_You will all witness today if he is capable of summoning his inner fire. His internal dragon. Let us see if he can unlock his Titan Wing"_. As Windwalker finished her last sentence, a group of 4 dragons, all rushed up to Toothless and pinned him down.

Toothless roared and yelped in shock. He struggled against his scaly bonds. The Berkians and Draconians all readied themselves to help the Night Fury. That is until Windwalker stopped them.

"_Do not worry my allies. This is all apart of the process. You see, a dragon undergoes the Change differently. It all depends on the dragon himself. Now, if you all truly want to see your friend improve himself, you WILL NOT INTERFERE!", _Windwalker scolded.

The group looked at each other in worry, not knowing what to do. They all turned to Hiccup, to see what he thought about his best friend being attacked like this. But surprisingly, Hiccup was no where to be found.

Toothless frantically searched the woods for his rider, struggling vainly to be free. His attempts were futile as he could not find his best friend.

"_Toothless, you actually proved to be a challenge for me. You are a strong dragon, I will give you that. You are also very stubborn from what I can tell. I also figured out, that the only way to ever get through you, is through your rider, Hiccup_", Windwalker stated as she pointed her wing to the top of the cliff. Toothless traced the direction of her outstretched wing and at the very top of the cliff was Hiccupâ€¦ being cornered by a dragon!

Toothless growled in anger, furiously trying to break free, only to be restricted even more. The group all went into a defensive mode, moving to rescue Hiccup. But their way kept on being blocked by the mountain-nest dragons.

"_DO NOT INTERFERE!", _Windwalker shouted. The group got anxious, worried about Hiccup's well-being.

"_Windwalker, this has to stop now!", _Re growled.

"_Trust him. I believe he can do this"_, Windwalker shot back.

"_Tell me Toothless, are you going to watch your rider fall to his death?"_, Windwalker asked in a mocking tone.

"_You leave him alone! He has done nothing to you!"_, Toothless snarled.

"_Stop focusing on me. Focus on saving your rider",_ Windwalker calmly replied.

"Toothless, bud. I could really use your help right now", Hiccup nervously yelled from the top of the cliff, as he neared closer to the edge. The dragon kept on 'assaulting' Hiccup with swipes of her tail and bites of her teeth.

Toothless wiggled and tossed and turned with all his might but he simply could not overcome the strength of 4 dragons. He stopped fighting for a couple of seconds, panting furiously.

"_Has the mighty Night Fury giving up?"_, Windwalker said smugly.

Toothless gave her a death glare.

Hiccup dodged the incoming attack from the dragon, but doing so caused him to slip and hang off the edge of the cliff by his hands.

Toothless' eyes turned to slits, his need to protect Hiccup was high.

"Toothless. I know you can do it! You can do it, bud. Try bud, please. Do it for me!", Hiccup screamed as the dragon stalked forward.

At the moment, Windwalker activated her Titan Wing, and in less than 5 seconds, she was covered from head to toe in an ethereal blue. She focused her gaze on Toothless, not moving a muscle or blinking. She tensed, focusing intently on the male Night Fury.

Toothless, growled low, and closed his eyes, tensing also. He started to change also.

"TOOTHLESS!", Hiccup screamed as he fell from the cliff, having lost his grip.

A sudden surge came from within Toothless. He felt a wave of pure energy flow over his body. His senses heightened, his body on high alert. He felt time slow down, as he snapped open his eyes just as his rider fell. His scales took on a blue hue as he unleashed a powerful roar and with a burst of strength, knocked all of the dragons off of him. He ran at a blazing speed to the side of the cliff and jumped towards it, sinking his claws into the rock. The scratching of rock could be heard as Toothless vertically ascended the cliff. He jumped and crawled his way to Hiccup. His rider, seeing his dragon companion approaching him, lined himself up to him in free

fall. With one last push, Toothless launched himself from the cliff towards Hiccup. he naturally spun himself in the air to line the saddle to his rider. Fluidly, they connected and Hiccup locked his prosthetic into the saddle with a click, and before they could even hit the ground, Toothless opened his wings and quickly did a vertical climb. Toothless did a quick loop before he landed on the ground swiftly. Both rider and dragon huffed in exhaustion. The mountain-nest dragons all cheered the alpha on, proud that he was able to unlock his Titan Wing!

Windwalker approached the two, smiling proudly. "_I knew you could do it!"_

Toothless' eyes turned to daggers as he glared at her. "_What on Earth were you thinking?! You could have KILLED MY RIDER!", _Toothless seethed.

"Hey bud, calm down. I wasn't really in danger", Hiccup soothed from atop of Toothless.

Toothless turned his head to him, half-mad but half-confused at the same time.

"Chris talked to me about what was going to happen today and asked if I would be okay with this. I agreed, only if no one got hurt. So, if you did not activate your Titan Wing, one of the mountain-nest dragons would have easily caught me. Sorry bud for scaring you", Hiccup explained as he rubbed Toothless' neck.

"_Tell me Toothless, what did you feel when you saw Hiccup feigning for his life?"_, Windwalker asked.

"_I wanted to rip your throat out for making me watch my rider almost die today...But I was furious at myself because I was helpless. I could not get to him-protect him"_, Toothless exhaled sharply, still fuming about what just occurred.

"_Would you say you were at your lowest point?"_

"_...Yes. I care about the man a lot. The affection you feel for Chris is what I feel for Hiccup. Don't tell me you wouldn't feel rage for watching someone block your attempts at saving the one you care about", _Toothless said.

"_Trust me, I don't blame you. I need you to remember that Toothless. I need you, for your sake, remember this day. Specifically, remember the adrenaline you felt when you almost lost the one you love. It is a sucky feeling but it is crucial. Whenever you want to summon your Titan, remember that feeling of almost losing him. Let the need to protect consume you. Let it guide your body. Do not deny the power, accept it. Basically, when you have the feeling, the mental assurance that __nobody_ _is going to die on your watch, that is what you should feel when you are about to summon your Titan Wing. It's the feeling you experience when you want __nobody_ _to mess around. Can you do that Toothless? Can you retain what I just taught you?". _As she said that, he Titan Wing deactivated.

Toothless just stared at the female Night Fury for a while before he finally exhaled and nodded.

At that moment the group swiftly approached the three, all bearing looks of worry and anger on their faces.

"_How dare you endanger our ally"_ , Re growled at Windwalker.

"_My king, I can't believe I am saying this, but I am fine. Hiccup is fine. Nobody got hurt"_

"_I know. The method sucks. But that is the only way I can solidly know they completed their part of the transformation", _Windwalker said.

"_What do you mean 'completed their part'?", _Tenor asked.

"_I don't know, but ever since I unlocked my Titan Wing, I felt different. I felt like I could do more, in a sense. Not just have boosted fire power, reflexes, and strength. I felt...different. After living with my Titan Wing for a year or so, I figured out I can do something extra: I could unlock other dragons' Titan Wings as well"_

"_How so?", _ Belch asked suspiciously.

"_Well, think of the ability to use the Titan Wing as a flowing river. That river always has two logs blocking the water from flowing. When dragons are under extreme pressure, given the circumstances, they could lift the first log. But most dragons only have the 'strength' to lift only the first log. I am able to help dragons 'lift' the second one. I have some kind of gift, okay. I somehow give him my power and transfer it to him, giving him that extra strength needed to 'lift' the second log. That's also why my Titan burned out already. But, for some reason, Toothless didn't need my power. It's like he has unlocked his Titan Wing before", _Windwalker replied.

"_I have. I was in a similar situation. Hiccup was about to get hit from an ice blast from a Bewilderbeast and I shielded him. I was sick and tired of him being a bully, and him hurting Hiccup crossed the line. And somehow I was able to unlock my Titan Wing", _Toothless commented.

"_That explains it. You are stronger than I thought you were. I am glad you changed my opinion about you."_

"_I don't know if I should be insulted or not", _Toothless remarked.

Before Windwalker could reply, Chris approached them, covered in blood.

"_Oh my, Chris are you okay?", _Aurora asked, worried.

"Don't worry it's not my blood, it is Fen-Chi's", Chris brushed off.

"What were you able to get out of him?", Astrid questioned.

"Well I am pleased to say that Gaozong is planning to meet with his ranking officers, at a village not far from here, in a few days time. It is almost perfect really. We can take out all the leaders of the

Song dynasty all in one attack!", Chris exclaimed.

"_So now, we can plan a good surprise attack that will surely catch them off guard!_", Tenor added.

"Exactly"

"_Chris, where is Fen-Chi? What are you going to do about him?", _his dad asked.

"Let's just say no one will need to worry about him escaping anymore", Chris replied casually.

Everybody got the hint. The rest of the day, they talked about the structure of the Song army and discussed how it would be best to attack Gaozong and his leaders. Knowing well, that they all were one step closer to winning the war.

19. Chapter 19

****Hello! I am excited as we are now about 4 more chapters from the end! I know, I know... It will suck once the story ends, but I am sure you will like the ending. At least I hope so. Anyways, just cuz I love to prolong the inevitable, here is this chapter. Enjoy and forgive my mistakes. ****

The next day arrived. Everybody was anxious because the next day, the surprise attack on Gaozong and his men would happen. In the meantime, the militia did miscellaneous things like fishing, grooming themselves, etc. Although, there was one thing that caught most of their attention that day. Today was the day where Re would unlock his Titan Wing.

Half of the militia, gathered to witness the event, having known full well how the process goes as Windwalker went through it-and guided them through it-with all of them. Re was in the middle of the gathering. Windwalker faced him, staring at him.

"_After witnessing what you saw with Toothless, are you willing to follow through with this?_", Windwalker questioned him.

Re squinted his eyes in thought. After hearing from Hiccup himself that he was in no real danger, he figured nothing bad would happen to him. At least nothing too bad.

Re then bore a solemn expression. "_Yes_"

Windwalker smiled at him. "_Good. Now, remove your armor_"

Re's expression turned to one of confusion. "_I'm sorry. What?_", Re asked.

Windwalker snorted, "_Remove. Your. Armorâ€¦ Unless of course you don't want to unlock your Titan Wing that is_", Windwalker said innocently.

Re paused briefly, then began to remove his golden armor, and crown. As he did this, Windwalker spoke. "_My brothers and sisters, hear me. You have seen the extent of my abilities, and you shall witness them

again. I can unlock any dragon's Titan Wing, and I have not failed yet to do so. Now, I will do the same, with the King of the dragons' homeland, known as Draconia. We shall see if he has what it takes!"_, Windwalker boomed. The dragons roared and cheered in excitement. Although, the Draconians and Berkians on the other hand were worried, especially Aurora.

Windwalker faced Re just as he finished removing his armor, bearing his emerald green scales, and kelly green underbelly to the crowd.

"_Are you ready?"_, Windwalker asked. Re nodded.

Windwalker turned back to the group. "_Alright. Now, all of you, if you wish witness his transformation, follow me and Re"_, Windwalker declared as she spread her wings and took off, with everybody following suit.

They all landed near the edge of a massive lake. Up above, a tiny speck dotted the sky. Dragon eyes could barely identify it to be Tiir, the yellow Hackatoo, hovering lazily high above the lake, with Chris standing on her back.

"_Re, step forward"_,

The King did was he was told.

"_Every dragon's metamorphosis into their Titan Wing is different. They each unlock theirs in certain ways. Yours starts up there"_. As Windwalker said this, she gestured with her head to Tiir and Chris. "_Go"_,

Re looked up at his far away son, spread his wings and took off, vertically climbing the sky until he met his son and the dragon holding him aloft in the air.

Windwalker waited, until Re was but a speck in the sky, accompanying her rider.

"_Re's task is simple. He must not hit the water. If he does, he will drown. Will he have what it takes to unlock his Titan Wing?"_, Windwalker announced.

The mountain-nest dragons looked on, waiting to see the King perform his task. His allies though, were confused.

"_Wait, I don't understand. What do you mean 'drown'? Re is a good swimmer"_, his mate Aurora, questioned puzzled.

Windwalker turned toward the queen. "_Not if he can't move his muscles", _Windwalker replied. After she said that, Windwalker looked up toward her rider and fired a plasma blast, signaling for him to start.

Meanwhile, up in the air, Chris was chatting with his father.

"So, how are things in the kingdom?"

Re was hovering in the air besides Tiir. "_Oh, things are running smoothly. Nothing major has happened besides a few volcanoes

erupting"_, Re said.

"I thought those volcanoes were dormant", Chris commented.

"_Nah, those things erupt here and there, luckily Aurora, Tenor, and I are able to handle the situation"_

"I'm sorryâ€¦", Chris apologized after a few seconds.

"_For what?"_

"For not coming back. I wanted to really, but after forming a close bond with Windwalker and being caught up in the dragon-Song war for these past 10 years, I couldn't go back. Not until I defeated the Song. Once they weren't a threat anymore, I did plan on coming back to Draconian. Not a day went by without my mind on you, mom, Tenor, and Serenity. I swear it", Chris explained.

Re looked down, then gazed back at his son. He sighed. "_It's okay. I understand that now that you are a man, I cannot restrict you anymore, but I need you to understand that we all missed you. The kingdom wasn't the same without you. We were faced with a sudden change. We all had to adjust without you in our lives, especially Serenity. We had to carry on with our lives. But we NEVER forgot. We always had your memory in our hearts. Yes, it saddened us, but we knew you wouldn't want us to be sad, so we moved on. But we NEVER forgot. We would count down the years without you. Whenever I went flying, I would remember you on my back, embracing the sky. Whenever Aurora would lay down beside a fire, she would remember you snuggling up to her, under her wing. Whenever Tenor was sparring, he would remember teaching you basic combat skills, striving to be the best fighter in all of Draconia. Whenever Serenity was healing wounded dragons, she would remember practicing her healing abilities on you, whenever you had a minor scrape or cut. We NEVER forgot. I love you Chris. We all love you Chris. Some call me crazy, for loving a human as a son. I didn't care what they had to say. You will forever be my son",_ Re spoke valiantly.

Chris's eyes beamed with happiness. Tearing up slightly, he jumped from Tiir's back, to his dad's. He smiled. "I love you dad", Chris said happily as he knelt down and hugged his dad's neck.

"_I love you too son"_, Re replied as he turned his head around and rubbed it against his son's head.

At that moment, Chris spotted Windwalker's plasma blast, signaling him. Chris grinned as he broke apart from the embrace.

"Do you trust me, dad?"

"_Of course I do"_, Re responded.

"Good...And I'm sorry"

"_Chris there is nothing to be sorry about, I forgave you just now"_, Re replied confusedly.

"Not for that, for this", Chris smirked. As he finished his statement, Chris pulled back his arm and balled up his fist. He then sent his fist straight into the space between Re's wings, hitting a

pressure point at the center of the wing base.

Re gasped as his wings failed him, falling from the sky. Chris simply fell off of him as his father tumbled around helplessly. Tiir dived after them and positioned herself near Chris, allowing him to grab onto her neck and ride her bareback.

Back on the ground, the group watched in horror as the King fell from the sky.

Aurora instinctively spread her wings, ready to take off and fly to her mate's rescue. However she was blocked by Windwalker.

"_Get out of my way!", _Aurora growled.

"_No, every other dragon in my nest has overcome their challenge. If they can do it, Re, the king, can easily accomplish this", _Windwalker soothed the worried queen.

"_Every dragon can't swim without wings! We all rely on them as we do in the sky. We 'swim' by flying through the water", _Stormfly squawked.

"_Aurora, do you love Re?"_, Windwalker asked the queen.

"_Why are you asking me this now?! Of course I love him!", _Aurora yelled.

"_Then trust him. Trust Re to do this", _Windwalker calmly spoke.

Aurora looked up at Re, who slowly started to get bigger as he descended toward the water.

"_Please tell me you have taken some sort of safety measures, like you did with Hiccup", _Aurora pleaded.

Windwalker smiled. "_Of course I do. I have my best dragons gliding over the lake. If Re hits the water, all of those dragons will converge to where he crashed and heave him out of the water. All your mate will suffer is a sore body from impacting the water. I assure you everything is under control"_

Aurora looked at Re with worry as her mate got even closer to the water. She hesitantly furled her wings behind her back. "_If he does hit the water, you will not stop me from rescuing him", _Aurora said ferociously.

"_Understandable"_, Windwalker said as she activated her Titan Wing. She then focused all of her power on Re.

Re was but a mere marionette at the hands of the sky. He roared in anger and fear. He tried to move his wings but that just made him flip and turn in the sky some more. Chris pulled up alongside him.

"Focus dad. Summon your Titan Wing".

"_Easier said than done!"_, Re yelled.

"Dad, remember when you felt helpless for not being able to find me in the sea", Chris mentioned.

Re, despite his haphazard tumbling, recalled the horrible memory.

"Use that feeling dad. Let it motivate you. Make sure you never want to feel that ever again. Let it be your motivation. Save yourself, dad. I know you can do it", Chris bellowed with determination.

Re glanced at the rapidly approaching lake. He closed his eyes. He couldn't let his son down. He couldn't let his mate down. And for sure he wasn't going to let his himself down! He opened his eyes and looked at the lake. They were barely 600 feet above the lake. He replayed the memory of Chris falling off his saddle. Only this time, he was going to catch him! Re growled as he started to change. He closed his eyes as he tensed up, transforming. A good 20 feet from impact, he spat fire at the water, and spread his wings wide, immediately stopping him from hitting the water, and zoomed towards the stratosphere.

From the ground, the crowd grew anxious. Hiccup and his party were worried that he wouldn't make it in time. Tenor and Aurora hastily spread their wings, preparing to save their king. However they were stopped when they heard Windwalker utter 'I got him'.

They looked at her, utterly muddled. They snapped their heads towards Re, about to hit the water. Just as they were about to take off, a huge spout of water filled the sky, and an object zoomed towards the sky. The object was but a blur as he then dived back down to the ground, in front of the group. He then unfurled his wings at the last second and landed on the ground hard, but with his activated Titan Wing, he felt nothing.

The group gasped when they realized the object was Re, but he looked different. His kelly green underbelly turned aureolin yellow. His horizontally straight-ridged underbelly adorned a new form. They were now shaped like horizontally-stretched, upside-down V's. Every other ridge extended his newly-yellow scales up around his body, and stopped along his spine, forming incomplete circles. To the viewer, it seemed like Re had an upside-down yellow rib cage. His tail grew longer and a third of his tail was now covered in aureolin yellow scales. His horns grew longer and the membrane between his wings were now aureolin yellow. His face changed as well. He now had small yellow arc on his forehead. Under his eyes, there were 2 obtuse yellow triangles, one for each eye. He breathed a strong flame of fire and roared in triumph, spreading his wings wide in victory.

The group cheered, joyed that another dragon unlocked his Titan Wing.

"_Re!_", Aurora called out.

The king turned just in time as Aurora ran up to him and nuzzled him feverishly.

"_You scared me!_", the queen exclaimed, "_I thought I was going to lose you_"

Re smiled and nuzzled her back. "_I not leaving you anytime soon,

Aurora"._

As they finished nuzzling each other, the people of Berk approached the king, giving their congratulations.

"_My king, you look nice"_, Meatlug commented.

"_I knew you could do it"_, exclaimed Belch.

"_You are now stronger than ever"_, Cloudjumper complimented.

"_I never doubted you for a moment"_, Toothless added, then he bowed down to his king. The rest of the Berk dragons followed suit.

Re blushed. "_Rise"_"

They did as they were told.

At that moment, Tiir landed and Chris hopped off, moving toward his father. "See. I knew you had it in you", Chris chuckled.

Re beamed and nuzzled his son, who in turn hugged his head.

Windwalker approached them, still bearing her Titan Wing. "_You passed...obviously. Now much like I told Toothless, I need you to remember this , remember the surge you felt. Whatever you thought of, remember it every time you want to activate your Titan Wing. It is crucial. Expand on it, let it take you. Let it guide your body. Do not deny the power, accept it. Can you do that Re?"_"

Re nodded and bowed his head, in respect. "_Thank you Windwalker, for helping me unlock my Titan Wing. I appreciate that"_. Windwalker smiled.

"_Um, how do I turn it off?"_, Re asked sheepishly.

"_Oh, that's simple. It goes away after some time, but once you feel that whatever task is over and done with, just see yourself as your former self. Your body should take care of the rest. In your case, once you are done being excited with your new change, you should be able to revert back"_, Windwalker answered.

Re grinned, overjoyed that he has become the first Draconian to unlock his Titan Wing. Not only did he plan to use his new-found ability to defend his loved ones and his country, but planned to help win this dreaded war, starting with the ambush the following day.

20. Chapter 20

****Hello guys! Since it is Thanksgiving break and I literally have nothing to do this week, I plan to end this story within the week! So I present to you the big battle. Excuse my errors since I have been working hours on this chapter and am posting this late at night, so my tired eyes won't be able to see the mistakes. Anyways, enjoy!****

The sun was high above the sky, embracing all under it an a blanket

of light and warmth. The militia was on edge, ready to defeat the emperor of the Song dynasty, Gaozong. The militia formed a blockade, awaiting their orders. Just then, Windwalker perched herself on a tall rock and roared, alerting the dragons of her presence. On her back was her rider, Chris. Windwalker waited a few moments, until she felt satisfied that everybody was quiet.

"_There is no mistaking this day, as just any other day in your lifetime. Today is the day that will change our lives, and most definitely our future. Today is the day, that we end our suffering, and our despair. We __will__ _stop this madness, this wave of destruction-not just for our sake, but for the sake of others. We will be the ones to change it all!"_

The group roared in agreement, the fire in their hearts igniting.

"_Let us prevent our future selves from watching our brethren, our young, our loved ones, from dying in front of our eyes. Let us plant the seed for a better future. A brighter future!"_

The crowd's yelling grew even louder.

"_Now remember this: No person has ever won a war by dying for his cause. He won it by making the other poor, dumb person die for his!"_

The militia hollered into the air, eager to win this war! Windwalker sprang into the air with the militia following close behind. She took off into the clouds, leading the group towards the battle.

As they were aloft in the sky, Hiccup steered Toothless next to Re. "Whatever she said, it sounded pretty inspirational, even though I heard nothing but roars".

Re faced Hiccup and smiled, "_Yeah, it was. She makes an excellent leader"._

The group flew for another hour and a half before they saw the enemy village on the horizon. Surprisingly, it looked more like a fort than a village. A heavily fortified fort. In the middle of it, lay a square-pyramid like building. Windwalker dove for the cover of the surrounding trees. The group followed suit.

She landed on the ground, about 200 yards from the base. She analyzed the fort in front of her while the rest of the group landed.

"_Everyone, listen up. Based on what Chris told me, Gaozong will arrive in a fancy kart of sorts. Once he arrives and settles inside the fort, we will attack. We will attack from both the west and east sides. Tiir will lead one part and I the other. Avoid flying, as to not be seen, until after I give the signal. Everybody got this?", _she stated once everyone was settled on the ground.

They nodded, understanding the plan.

"_Break!"_

Tiir and her group moved around the base, getting into position. The

allies (the Berkians and Draconians) divided themselves up evenly. Re, Aurora, Cloudjumper and Valka, Stormfly and Astrid, Meatlug and Fishlegs, and Hiccup and Toothless with Tiir's group, while the others were with Windwalker and Chris.

Tenor was starting to get frisky, yearning for the battle to start. Windwalker noticed and approached him.

"_Don't tell me you're nervous"_, Windwalker sighed.

"_On the contrary. I am impatiently waiting to sink my claws into those Song scum"_, Tenor growled, flashing his black teeth.

Windwalker grinned, "_Is that you, or your male ego talking?"_

"_I'm surprised you don't know the difference"_, Tenor shot back, smiling.

"_Oh I do, I'm just worried that you don't"_, Windwalker said chuckling.

They smirked at each other and laughed. Once they came down from their amused highs they stared at each other.

They were locked into each other's gaze for a momentâ€¦.that is until Chris caught their attention.

"Guys! Gaozong is arriving. Check it out", Chris harshly whispered as he kept lookout, not noticing Windwalker and Tenor's moment. They broke out of their intimate moment, and quickly averted their gazes off each other, scales flushing with embarrassment.

The three crouched behind their cover and watch intently as Gaozong's horse-drawn cart pulled into the fort.

"Alright. Let's wait 30 minutes, before we initiate the attack", Chris decided.

Tenor and Windwalker nodded in understanding.

The other group noticed as well, but Tiir held them back, reminding them not to do anything until they get Windwalker's signal. Both groups said nothing within those 30 minutes. All were cautious and tense, waiting for their most important battle to begin.

What felt like eternity finally ended when Windwalker's side burst through the foliage, screaming their battle cries. Re, Aurora, and the Berkians were about to rush forward, when Tiir stopped them.

"_Windwalker has not given the signal! Wait!"_, Tiir ordered.

"_The battle has begun, there is no waiting!"_, Re said, frustrated.

"_Wait"_, Tiir snarled.

Re was about to say more, but was cut off when a plasma blast came their way and exploded.

"_CHARGE!"_, Tiir boomed. And with that, her group sprinted out of the surprised soldiers were preoccupied with Windwalker's group that almost all of the soldiers from the east side went to the west side to help defend it. Much like Windwalker's group, once they were close enough, Tiir gave the command 'scatter' and everybody fanned out in all directions. The few soldiers on the east side could not alert and defend their side once they saw Tiir's group advancing on them. They were easily overpowered as the soldiers were not quick enough to do anything. Tiir's group quickly entered the base and flamed everything in sight. They were soon joined by Windwalker's group, and together they battled the oncoming soldiers. They slashed and bit their way through the base, but proved to be more difficult than expected. The soldiers were throwing what looked like hand-held bombs most likely filled with Huo Yao. That was throwing the dragons off guard.

"_Activate your Titan Wing now!"_, Windwalker screeched. In a moment, most of the dragons transformed. The few who didn't weren't so luckyâ€¦ They either didn't have enough time to change with all the explosions going around, or were killed by Song soldiers who took advantage of the dragons' confusion.

Toothless found a good cover spot for both him and Hiccup, and closed his eyes, trying to change. He had some trouble, but thought back to what Windwalker had to him. In 10 seconds, he went from a Night Fury covered in black scales, to a Night Fury covered in black scales, glowing blue along his spine and the middle of his forehead.

He joined in the battle and used his boosted abilities to his advantage. A second later, he found Re fighting 13 soldiers by himself. He too activated his Titan Wing and one could only see a green-and-yellow blur slashing its way through the enemy.

Chris, in the meantime, slashed and stabbed his way to the tall building, figuring that's where Gaozong would be. He eventually burst into a room filled with 9 men. They all dressed and looked the same, except for one man. That man was clad in a long, flowing green robe with dragons etched into it. He wore brown sandals and had on many rings. He bore a stern face and had a long, thin, dark beard that stopped short of his cheeks. He had beady eyes and his hair was tied back in a ponytail. He wore some type of hair piece into his ponytail, which was probably a crown of sorts. Whatever it was, Chris could immediately recognize it as Gaozong.

The group of men looked at Chris with confusion. Gaozong spoke boldly, "Zhǎ" shǎ- shǎ@nme? Cǎ-kǎ"? (what is this? an assassin?)"

"Mǎ@iyÇ'u. WÇ' shǎ- yǎ«gǎ" shuǎ- jiǎ¹ huǎ- bǎ ofǎ¹ nÇ. shǎ"ngchǎ"ng zǎ i nÇ. de zhǎ"ngfǎ° quǎ;nlǎ- de shǎ"ngmǎ-ng, yǎ³uqǎ- shǎ- lǎ³ng (no. I am the one who will avenge all the lives you claimed in your conquest for power, especially the dragons)", Chris replied harshly.

"Lǎ³ng? WÇ' lÇ·jiǎ> de rǎ@n, dǎ n lǎ³ng? Nǎ xiǎ" kǎ>zǎ"ng de shǎ-? (dragons? I understand the people, but dragons? those abominations?)", Gaozong scoffed.

"NÇ. zǎ>nme gÇžn? Tǎ·men zhÇ·shǎ- jÇ·n kǎ>nǎ@ng duǎ. de rǎ@n, nÇ. hǎ@

wÇ' (How dare you?! They are just as much people as you and me)", Chris shot back.

"WÇ' bÃ¹ zhÃ«dÃ o nÇ• shÃ¬ shuÃ-, dÃ n nÇ• zhÇ•shÃ¬ lÃ ngfÃ"i wÇ' de shÃ-jĩ. n.WÇ' dÃ.nxA«n wÇ' de huÇ•miÃ" huÃ² yuÃ" gÃ.ngyÃ¬ng cÃ.ngkÃ¹, Ã©r bÃ¹shÃ¬ yÃ«xiÃ" lÃ³ng de gÃ.ngjÃ- hÃ© yÃ°chÇ"n de nÃ;nhÃ;i... ShÃ.le tÃ. (I don't know who you are, but you just wasted my time. I have to worry about my destroyed Huo Yao supply storages, not some dragon attack and a foolish boy...Kill him)", Gaozong ordered.

3 nearby guards went in to kill him, but were soon slain by Chris. As he finished that, he once again eyed Gaozong. "NÇ• xÃ«yÃ o quÃ"bÇŽo nÇ• de jÃ«dÃ¬ shÃ¬ lÃ³ng de zhÃ"ngmÃ¬ng. WÇ' hÃ© wÇ' de lÃ³ng jÃ«n qÃ«ngsÃ.ng de chÃ.oyuÃ"le nÇ• nÃ kÃ>liÃ;n de zhÃ"nyÃ¬ng (You need to make sure that your bases are dragon-proof. My and my dragon army easily overtook your pathetic camps)"

The Song emperor's eyes went wide, "NÃ shÃ¬ nÇ•?! (That was you?!)"

Chris grinned, "WÇ' de xiÇŽolÃ³ng hÃ© wÇ' de lÃ"qÃ¹ kÃ nzhe tÃ•men bÃ ozhÃ rÃ¹ yÃ"kÃ.ng (My dragons and I had fun watching them explode into the night sky)".

"NÇ• jiÃ.ng zÃ.oshÃ²u jÃ-dÃ ! NÇ• kÃ>nÃ©ng yÇ•jÃ«ng sÇ•wÃ;ng 3, dÃ n rÃ ng wÇ'men kÃ n kÃ n nÇ• rÃ°hÃ© miÃ n duÃ¬ fÇŽnduÃ¬ de 6 bÃ"i, zhÃ"ge shÃ¹zÃ¬! (You will suffer greatly. You may have killed 3, but let us see how you face against 6 times that number!)"

With a flick of his wrist 18 men all rushed towards Chris, aiming their weapons at him.

"WÃ;n dÃ© kÃ•ixÃ«n (Have fun)", Gaozong chuckled darkly as he and his top men left the building.

Chris growled, eyeing his new assailants as they closed in on him.

Then, out of the tall, square-pyramid-looking building, Gaozong's men came rushing out with their weapons. They obviously earned that title, since they were able to slaughter any dragon that came their way, even with their Titan Wing's activated. Windwalker flew over to Re and Aurora, who were currently fighting side-by-side.

"_I need you two now!_", she ordered.

The pair finished up their attacks and flew alongside Windwalker. "_Can you two handle a guy or two each?"_

"_Yes we can"_ , Aurora said firmly.

"_Good. Hey Tenor, get up in the air and provide some cover fire for us"_ , Windwalker shouted from up above as she saw Tenor finish sinking his venomous teeth into a soldier.

"_I'm on it!_", Tenor huffed as he sprang into the air.

Windwalker and the king and queen of Draconia all landed in front of the group of men, just as one of them slashed a dragon in the throat, watching it slump to the ground, dead.

They regarded the trio of dragons and smirked. Windwalker flattened her ears and growled. "_You will pay for killing Tsade you monsters", _Windwalker seethed.

The group chuckled darkly and spread themselves out, eyeing each of them with killer intent. The trio mirrored their actions. Re and Aurora had 2 men each while Windwalker had 3.

Each side charged at each other with no remorse. Aurora spat fire at them before she jumped in the air and caught one in her claws, before slamming herself back on the ground, crushing the guy in her talons. She then whipped the other in the face, temporarily stunning the guy. Re simply charged one at full force, but the soldier was too quick and sidestepped Re. He saw the other guy coming from behind but acted like no one was there. He preoccupied himself by dodging his opponent's attacks. Once the guy behind him was close enough, he wrapped his tail around the soldier's leg and swung him into the soldier in front of him. He then repeatedly bashed that soldier on the ground with the soldier in his tail. They soon were dead. Windwalker did a quick 360 spin and knocked one of the soldiers into a building. She then fired a plasma blast into the house, causing it to explode. However, one of remaining soldiers knocked her in the face with a meteor hammer. She was stunned for a bit but shook it off. The other one though, was able to get on her back and tried stabbing her. Windwalker took notice of this and started to buck him off. Tenor saw this from up above and right when the soldier on top of Windwalker looked like he got the upper hand, he shot a plasma bolt at him, knocking him off of her. Windwalker then rushed the soldier with the meteor hammer. He was trying his best to kill Windwalker but to no avail. Windwalker avoided all the attacks and pounced on him, ripping him apart. They were all about to regroup when Aurora hissed out in pain. the soldier that she temporarily stunned regained his senses and stabbed Aurora in her back hind paw with a spear. She wrapped her tail around his neck and lifted him off the ground. She then hissed and squeezed her tail around his neck. Aurora watched as the man struggled for breath before she gave a strong squeeze which effectively broke his neck. The rest of the Draconians approached Aurora.

"_Are you alright?"_, Re said worriedly as he removed the spear from her paw, with his jaws.

"_I'm..fine"_, she hissed in pain. Aurora, being the dragon god's daughter, used a bit of her magic to make the pain go away. She took a deep breath of air and let it out a warm breath on her injured paw. In seconds the pain was nothing but a mere tingle.

"_We will get it checked out by Serenity when this is done"_, Re said as he nuzzled her.

Aurora chuckled and nuzzled him back. "_Alright my love. We will"_.

At that moment, Chris exited the tall building, covered in blood and bruises. He turned his head everywhere, trying to find Gaozong. He then spotted him getting into his royal cart, where it then sped off escaping the fight.

"Windwalker! Gaozong is getting away", Chris yelled.

The mountain-nest alpha lifted her head, looking for her rider. She saw him running toward his carriage, which was speedily making its escape.

"_Tiir, wrap things up!_", she barked as she zoomed toward her rider. She pulled up alongside him, and Chris swung himself into her saddle, and they then flew off after Gaozong.

The duo sped up to the cart, which was currently speeding down the cliff of a deep valley. Two men then pulled themselves from out of the cart and onto the roof. They pulled out their bows and arrows and started firing at them. Chris, swords already extended, did his best to block those arrows. Windwalker on the other hand, steered them out of the paths of any arrows that came their way.

Then one of the bowmen threw one of the Huo Yao bombs at the duo. The other bowmen fired an arrow at the bomb and it exploded right in Windwalker and Chris's faces. It threw them off-course and they crashed down. They yelled, trying to shake off the blast. Once Chris regained his bearings he saw the cart pulling away from his view.

"Come on Windwalker!", he urged his dragon.

Windwalker shook her head a couple of times before she growled and ran, preparing for take off. Chris mounted her as she did so and within seconds they were in the sky again. They were behind the cart and once again the bowmen fired at them.

"I'm getting sick of this!", Chris shouted.

"_Let's end this_", Windwalker snarled. She maneuvered herself to the side of the cart and did a quick loop around the cart, giving Chris just enough time to separate the horses from the cart. She then shot a plasma blast in front of the cart, which then threw the cart and the bowmen off balance. Finally, she rammed into the cart, which sent it flying over the cliff and into the valley. For extra measure, she did a quick dive and fired her strongest bolt of plasma she had which caused a massive explosion. The duo hovered in the air, watching the cart fall into the deep valley. They didn't move until they heard the thud of the remains of the cart.

"We did it", Chris barely whispered. "WE DID IT!", Chris said again but with more confidence

Windwalker gave a roar of victory before shooting her last blot of plasma into the sky, shrouding the air with a brief, purple haze.

All the dragons were waiting in the center of the base, waiting for their alpha's return. They didn't have to wait any longer as Windwalker and Chris landed in front of them.

"My friendsâ€¦ the dragon-Song war is over! We destroyed their Huo Yao camps, destroyed their elite men, and just now Windwalker and I killed Gaozong!", Chris declared.

The entire militia burst into cries and roars of joy. Some dragons did quick loops in the air and some shot fire into the sky. Astrid went up to Hiccup, pulled him by the front of shirt, and gave him a

big kiss. Hiccup was initially shocked, but kissed her back with twice as much passion.

Tenor and Windwalker butted heads, and Re and Aurora nuzzled each other again.

"Friends, family...we can go home, without fear, but with relief. Let us celebrate back at the nest!", Chris shouted valiantly.

The militia couldn't have agreed more. The militia gather up their wounded, and happily flew off into the sunset, homeward bound. All that was left of their battle was a scorched, black field, full of fire and dead soldiers.

Nothing was left at the base, everything was reduced to ashes. Along the road where Windwalker and Chris gave chase, a sole figure emerged. He was dressed in a long green robe. The figure brushed all the dirt and twigs from his robe and stared at his destroyed base. It was Gaozong. He thought back to how he almost would've died, had he not told his bowmen to give him a distraction. When the bowmen exploded one of the Huo Yao bombs, Gaozong lept out of the cart and rolled into the bushes alongside the cliff road. Everyone was distracted by the explosion, so nobody noticed him leaving. He then hid, and waited the whole battle out. He smirked as nobody noticed his absence and Windwalker and Chris sped after the cart, thinking he was there.

But when he walked back to his destroyed base and looked around, he was furious and slightly sad that those pestering dragons killed his most elite men! He sat down on a rock, wondering what to do next.

Just then Gaozong was approached by a man. This man was just another Song soldier. All Gaozong saw was another man waiting to be slaughtered. In fact he would have, if it wasn't for Hiccup sparing his life!

"Ǻ^, tǺ;nggǺ•ozǺ•ng. RǺ°guÇ' zhǺ" yǺ-wǺ"izhe shǺ@nme, wÇ'men kǺ>yÇ• zhuǺ«bÇ" tǺ•men (Uh, Gaozong. If it means anything, we can hunt them down)", the man said as he bowed his head in respect to his emperor.

Gaozong snapped his head at him. "NÇ• zǺ>nme xiÇŽng, wÇ'men zuǺ² dǺ o zhǺ" yǺ«diÇŽn? WÇ'men shǺ@nme dǺ•u mǺ@iyÇ'u xǺ-miǺ" de. WÇ' de dÇ•ngjǺ- nǺ;n zhuǺ•ng dǺ•u zÇ'uliÇŽo, wÇ' de huǺ² yǺ o gǺ•ngyǺ-ng bǺ¹jiǺ nle! (And how do you suppose we do that?! We have nothing to go off of. My top men are gone, and my Huo Yao supply is gone! We are in a positions where we cannot do anything!)", Gaozong berated.

" DiǺ nxiǺ , wÇ' yÇ'u zhǺ"xiǺ" (Your highness, I have these)", the man said as he opened us his pal to reveal some black scales, that just so happened to belong to a male Night Fury alpha. "WÇ'men suÇ'yǺ o zuǺ² de jiǺ¹shǺ- yuǺ;nle yǺ«xiǺ" gÇ'u, shǺ•ujǺ- nÇ• de jǺ«nduǺ- de qǺ-yǺ° bǺ¹fǺ"n, rǺ ng gÇ'u dǺ ilÇ•ng nǺ-n dǺ o lǺ³ng. JiǺ¹ zhǺ"me jiÇŽndǺ•n. CǺ³ng nǺ lÇ•, nÇ• kǺ>yÇ• zuǺ² rǺ"nhǺ@ nÇ• qÇ"yuǺ" tǺ•men, diǺ nxiǺ

(All we have to do is round up some dogs, gather the rest of your army and let the dogs lead you to the dragons. Simple as that. From there, you can do whatever you please with them, your

highness)"

Gaozong pulled his face back into a smirk. "XiÇŽohuÇ'zi, nÇ• huÃ¬ rÃ°hÃ© xiÇŽng yÃ«qÇ• dÇŽ wÇ', kÃ nzhe wÇ' cuÃ«huÇ• yÃ«qiÃ", nÃ xiÃ" lÃ³ng yÇ'u? (Young man, how would you like to fight alongside me and watch as I destroy all that those dragons have?)"

"ZhÃ" jiÃ•ng shÃ¬ wÇ' de rÃ³ngxÃ¬ng, xiÃ•nshÃ¬ng (It would be my honor, sir)", the man bowed.

Gaozong started to chuckle darkly, he and the young man set off, ready to enact their plan of revenge. Those dragons won't know what's coming for them!

21. Chapter 21

Hey guys. I hope you all like this chapter. This one will be the darkest one out of this story I believe. I hope you review it and tell me your thoughts about it. Enjoy and forgive me for my grammatical mistakes.

Serenity woke up with a yawn. She rubbed her eyes and looked around the cave she slept in.

She sighed. 'Another day passes and they have not yet returned', she thought.

She got up, ate some breakfast, and went to the cave where all the sick/injured dragons were. But alas, ever since she showed up, there was barely any dragons in there at all, except for one. She went to that dragon and inspected his broken wing again.

"Well, it is getting better. Another 2 weeks and you can remove it", she told Revyn, a purple Scatterthing (a quick dragon that resembles a garden snake with wings).

"_Thank you ma'am_", Revyn stated as he went about his business.

Serenity sighed again, not knowing what to do for the rest of the day. That is until she heard shouting coming from every direction in the mountain. She saw dragons all flocking outside. She ran up to a dragon who was about to take off.

"What's going on? What happened?", Serenity asked worriedly.

"_The militia, they're back!_", the dragon shouted with glee.

"Can you take me with you?", Serenity asked nicely.

"_Hop on and hang tight!_", the dragon said as he lowered himself so Serenity could mount him.

Serenity did so and the pair took off, zooming through the winding tunnels until they joined the rest of the dragons in the sky. The mountain-nest dragons flew towards the approaching militia, grateful for their return. The mountain-nest dragons did a quick 360 and accompanied the militia as they touched down, finally back home.

Once the group landed, dragons started approaching their loved ones, welcoming them back home and asking how was the journey.

"Chris!", Serenity shouted as she jogged toward him.

Chris turned to her voice and was filled with joy that he was able to see her beautiful face once again. He ran to her as well. They were about to hug, but Toothless was quicker and reached Serenity first. He nuzzled against her neck and warbled in joy, glad to see his favorite dragon healer. Serenity had no choice but to hug him back and pat his neck, but all the while maintained eye contact with Chris. Her body language told him that she was sorry and couldn't do anything about it.

Chris shrugged and put on a fake smile, understanding. But deep down, he was slightly jealous that the Night Fury ruined their intimate moment. Then, the dragons who stayed home shouted with glee once they heard that the war was over and the Song empire defeated. Numerous chats occurred at the same time. They probably would've continued but a single, booming roar silenced the cacophony of dragon noises.

"_My brothers and sisters, I am glad that our suffering can finally be over", _Windwalker started.

Everyone roared in victory.

"_Butâ€¦ let us celebrate properly, like we always do. Once the sun sets, and the night sky shines bright with the stars above, everyone will meet at the Scorch. Let us show our guests a very important part of our mountain-nest culture"_ , Windwalker concluded, with Chris translating.

The mountain-nest dragons couldn't agree more, and did as their alpha commanded. The crowded dissipated and all that was left was the Berkians and Draconians.

"_What is the Scorch? What's going to happen tonight?"_ , Hookfang asked Windwalker as she approached.

Windwalker chuckled, "_All it good time my friends, all in good time"_ . Chris then mounted her and they flew off into the mountain, leaving their allies puzzled at what was going to happen later that evening.

The group met up with Windwalker and Chris back at their cave, to discuss what was going to happen after today.

"Well Hiccup, it has been a long journey, but I must thank you and your people for helping Windwalker and I win the dragon-Song war", Chris thanked.

"No problem. Is it safe to say that we can be allies from this day onward and can count on you and your 'village' should I have any problems?", Hiccup asked slyly.

Chris scoffed, "Are you negotiating with me on an alliance?"

"Well, yes. Yes I am", Hiccup replied.

"Hmmm, I don't know. Windwalker what do you think? Should we ally with Berk?", Chris asked his best friend.

Windwalker looked up in thought, then faced her human companion and groaned, nodding her head.

"Well Hiccup, chief of Berk, it looks like you got yourself an alliance with the mountain-nest", Chris stated, extending his hand to Hiccup. Hiccup smiled and shook his hand firmly, sealing the alliance.

"_You know, you are a very interesting dragon Windwalker", _Re said.

"_Thank you. I take that as a compliment", _Windwalker replied, with Chris translating to the Vikings.

"_You proved yourself to me that you are an excellent leader", _Re continued.

"You know, I am interested in finding out how you became the alpha here, Windwalker", Hiccup commented.

"She obviously had to earn it son", Valka voiced.

"I know that, but how? I mean, Toothless had to defeat the Bewilderbeast, Re was passed down the throne from his parents, so what did you do that made you the alpha here?", Hiccup pressed.

Windwalker bore a sad expression and looked down. She crooned. Chris patted and rubbed at her scales in comfort.

"Oh I'm sorry! I didn't mean any offense", Hiccup quickly added.

Windwalker hardened her expression. "_Don't worry, it's fine. But how about I tell you a story instead?"_, Chris translated, speaking for Windwalker.

Hiccup slowly nodded.

"_A long time ago, there was a female Night Fury. She was born scared and confused, overwhelmed with the world around her. But, she had two wonderful and loving parents that comforted her and guided her through life. She mainly felt alone because she was the only young Night Fury in her nest, even though she was the daughter of the alpha, her father. She continued to be desolate until she met an older, yet adolescent Night Fury. His name was Syrik"._

Toothless' eyes grew wide, starting to understand what Windwalker was talking about when he and Windwalker had that skirmish a few weeks ago.

"_They grew to become best friends. They did everything together. The parents approved of their friendship and all was swell in the nest...until she noticed that Syrik started to change. He wouldn't talk to her as much, and when he looked at her, he had a hungry look. She didn't know why but it started to creep her out. She thought she was losing him as a friend until one day, Syrik approached her. What

he said next shocked her. He asked her to leave her family and nest, and start a life of their own... as mates. Even though, Syrik had become an adult, she was barely an adolescent and was not ready to take a mate yet. He thought otherwise, and tried to capture her. She, however, escaped and flew as fast as she could to her parents, with Syrik close behind. Luckily, she reached her parents and they banned Syrik from the nest, threatening to kill him if he ever got near her again. He flew away, stating that it wasn't over. She felt safe once again with her parents. But one night, she awoke to their screams. She rushed to their cave and watched with her very eyes as Syrik butchered them in their sleep. She panicked and rushed out to escape, but Syrik thought ahead and caved in her only exit route with a plasma blast. Cornered, she had no other option but to fight. She clawed and bit at Syrik but the male Night Fury proved to be the strongest and easily defeated her. She lay on the ground, bloody and helpless. Syrik stood over her and whispered in her ear that he was going to show the world who she belonged to by mating her and making her his. Upon hearing so she struggled frantically, trying to escape her rapist. Syrik just chuckled darkly and dug his claws into her right flank, raking it across her scales, holding her in place. She screamed in pain, begging for him to stop. The bastard just smirked and watched her scuffle in vain. He told her there was no point, since the Night Fury populace was low, they were obligated to help bring forth the next generation and increase their numbers. She closed her eyes, praying to her god, Lord Draco, for strength to end this. As he prepared to mate her, she felt a sudden surge flow through her body. She opened her eyes as her body filled up with strength. Syrik looked on with shock as he noticed that along the base of her spine and the middle of her forehead, it started to glow blue. In an attempt to remind her who was in control of the situation, he bit her neck. Upon feeling the pressure on her neck, she retaliated. She roared her anger and threw Syrik off of her. Syrik was astonished that she was able to do so, but nonetheless growled and tried to put her in her place. She threw her boosted plasma blasts at him. He grew weaker but still fought. She was able to overwhelm Syrik and ultimately tore his head off of his body. But she didn't stop there. No, she continued to rip and tear at his body until it was nothing but a mangled mess...or at least until there was nothing left to identify him by. She roared and cried out in agony. She crawled to her parents and collapsed in front of them, sobbing uncontrollably. She wallowed in despair, surrounded by the three Night Furies that impacted her life. But then, she was visited by Lord Draco himself. He fixed her wounds and comforted her, telling her that she would grow up to be a very important dragon. Before he left, he exhaled a long, warm breath over her body. Upon doing that, she felt a tingly warmth, spread all over her. He told her that he bestowed a gift to her. A gift she will soon come to realize once she was older. He carved a way out of the mountain for her, telling her to use her new-found strength and gift wisely, before disappearing. Windwalker realized that she could no longer go back to the scared, little hatchling she once was. She had to be strong, for Draco's sake at least. Using her new ability-later learning that it was the Titan Wing-she became alpha of her pact and led them away from her old nest. She swore from then on, that she would stop any evil coming her or her pact's way, for she did not want anyone else to feel the pain she felt. She swore that she would never go back to the way she was: a poor dragon who could not help herself"_

The cave was silent. Nobody made a sound, feeling sadness over hearing such a dark story.

"_Over the years, she proved herself to be a fine alpha. She found another suitable nest for her pack. She would shred anything that endangered her nest, dragon or human. She protected her nest fiercely, obliterating anything that jeopardized it. Her nest grew and grew as more dragons realized that she was a friendly, yet fierce alpha. She was deadly...and she had every right to be"_.

As the story ended, the group looked at each other with shocked and sorrowful faces.

Just then, a group of hatchlings flew up to the cave. "_Windwalker! Windwalker! Windwalker!", _they shouted.

Windwalker smiled and turned to face them, "_Yes, what is it, young ones?",_ she asked nicely.

As she turned she exposed the right side of her body. The allies gasped at what they saw. Across her right flank, she bore 4 scratch-like scars along her scales. The group now realized who she was talking about, and the pain they felt in their hearts worsened.

She turned toward the group once she finished consulting with the hatchlings. She had a sad smile etched onto her features. "_Enough of the story-telling. We have a celebration that's about to commence. I suggest that we all go to Scorch now; It's time"_, Windwalker spoke softly. With that, she took wing and flew out of the cave and toward the Scorch.

The cave was silent for a few minutes, still processing what they just found out.

"That was her, wasn't it?", Eret asked.

Chris hung his head and nodded solemnly. "The only regret she has, was that she wasn't able to save her parents. She blames herself for their deaths"

"_Oh my gosh, I-I'm so sorry"_, Aurora commented.

"Don't tell me mom, tell her", Chris replied coolly.

"One of the reasons why we bonded was because we were both helpless. We were both weak. She felt like she could've saved her parents and I felt like I could've held on tighter to Re's saddle to see mine. But when we were at our lowest points, we found strength. She felt like trash and I was labeled as such", Chris added.

"_What do you mean 'labeled as such'?"_, Tenor asked.

Chris turned around and lifted up his shirt. Along the small of his back, was one word: sampah. It was the brand mark from when he when he met Windwalker at that prison camp long ago.

"Sampah, is Malay for trash. Those people wondered why a young boy such as myself was roaming around the forest with no parents. So they probably thought I was banished for something. That's why they branded me with it; to remind me that I will forever be trash to them, as well as a slave", Chris announced as he turned around and

lowered his shirt back onto his body.

"But I have come to accept that it doesn't matter to me what others think of me. I learned that I could cry and do nothing about it, or stand up and fight back. Choosing the latter shaped me into who I am today. And I am pretty damn happy about that", Chris said proudly.

"I'm proud of you", Serenity uttered.

Chris smiled down at her as he got up. "I'm glad you think so...Now that that has happened, you all have two choices: you can either sulk in here and miss out on the celebration, or you can accompany my nest and I as we show you what it means to truly be mountain-nest dragon", Chris smirked.

The group all looked at each other and smiled, agreeing to partake in the celebration. They all got up and flew out of the cave, heading for the Scorch.

22. Chapter 22

****Hello my readers. This chapter will include some culture! People have different customs and traditions depending where you go. Some perceive them to be weird, outrageous, etc. So please don't judge when you finish reading this chapter! I thought it was a great idea. And anyways, it builds up to the climax of the story! Enjoy and please review!...and forgive my mistakes.****

The Scorch was an area where the mountain-nest dragons held all of their ceremonies. It was located on the east side of their nest. It was a massive crater in the ground. No life grew there. In the center of the Scorch was a wide, flat circle that was about 22.5 yards in diameter. Dotting various areas of the Scorch were countless, small fire pits. They did not provide much light individually, but when they were surrounded by other fire pits, the Scorch was as bright as day.

All of the dragons were on edge, excited for the celebration to start.

The Berkians and Draconians were "_Where is Chris?"_, Re asked his party, "_I just saw him not too long ago"_"

"I don't know. Maybe he slipped away amongst the crowd of dragons", Eret suggested.

Just then, the infamous whistle of a Night Fury power dive could be heard. All became silent. Then, a plasma blast was released and struck the ground, covering the Scorch with a flash of Purple and an audible 'boom'. When the smoke cleared, everybody was able to see Windwalker standing valiantly in the center of the circle, with Chris in the saddle. He dismounted and together they roared a cry of victory, with the audience following suit.

"My friends, we are family, are we not?", Chris stated.

The dragons roared in agreement.

"Do we stand together? Or divided?"

"_Together! Together!"_

"So tell me, when we face adversity, do we cower away?"

"_Nooo!"_

"What do we do?"

"_We fight!"_

"What have we accomplished today?"

"_We won the war!"_, the dragons jeered in success

"Alright, alright. Settle down", Chris spoke.

The Scorch soon was quiet again. The dragons patiently waited to hear more of their human friend.

"_Now. Many of you have noticed that there are new faces in the nest", _Windwalker took over.

The dragons started murmuring, sending glances to the Berkians and Draconians.

"_Most of you only know that they are our allies. They most certainly deserve to be so. They have fought bravely with us, and helped us win this war!"_

The Scorch was filled with roars yet again, commemorating their allies.

"What did she say?", Hiccup asked Re.

"_She is honoring us. Saying how we helped win this war",_ Re responded.

"But to me, some of them are more than friends", Chris announced.

That confused the mountain-nest dragons.

"Draconians, step forward", Chris ordered.

They looked at each other, confused as to what Chris was about to do. As they stepped to the middle of the Scorch, all eyes were on them.

"This here is the King of Draconia. His name is Re. Next to him is his mate and queen, Aurora. The black dragon is known as Tenor. He is the prime minister of Draconia. For those of you who do not know what that is, he is their 3rd in command. His rider, is this lovely lady. Her name is Serenity. She is one of the best dragon healers the world has ever seen!"

The Draconians blushed from the attention they were getting.

"Now, the reason why I called them up here, and not the rest of them is simple. They each have a special place in my heart, besides Windwalker. For you see, many of you have asked where I came from; who my parents were; where was my family. Well, let me finally answer all of your questionsâ€¦. They are my family".

The mountain-nest dragons gasped at hearing such astonishing news, and more murmurs could be heard all around the Scorch.

"They were the ones that raised me from birth. They are the ones who taught me everything I ever knew. They shaped me into who I am today. And I am proud of that!"

The crowd unexpectedly began to cheer again.

"Now for our allies and my family's sake, let us show them how we do things around here!"

The mountain-nest dragons yelled in delight, joyful that they can finally start the celebration.

A pulse started to fill the crater. More rhythm was added as the mountain-nest dragons-using their various body parts and the ground-started to create a beat. Then the dragons who weren't playing took to the skies, flying in every direction doing loops, corkscrews, and other aerial maneuvers. While doing so, they started humming a tune. The cacophony of noise all synchronized into a song.

Then Chris did something unexpected; he started to sing.

"As a child you would wait

"And watch from far away.

"But you always knew that you'd be the one

"that work while they all play."

He approached his family, singing without a care in the world. He gesticulated as many words as he could. Then as the verse finished, he immediately sidestepped and approached the Berkians.

"In youth you'd lay

"awake at night and scheme

"of all the things that you would change,

"but it was just a dream!"

The Berkians gave him weird looks. In fact, the only ones who didn't give him weird looks were Hiccup, Valka, and the dragons of Berk. They seemed to be enjoying it! He raised his hand as he concluded his 2nd verse. Then out of nowhere, Windwalker scooped him up in her claws. She flew around, dancing in the air.

"Here we are, don't turn away now,

"we are the warriors that built this town.

"Here we are, don't turn away now,

"we are the warriors that built this town

"From dust."

Chris flipped onto Windwalker's back as he continued. He beckoned them to join him.

"This is stupid! We are Vikings! We don't sing and da-". Snotlout was interrupted as Cloudjumper and Valka flew past him, accompanying the dragons in the sky. Serenity and Tenor looked at each other and smiled, thinking the same thought. Serenity quickly mounted Tenor and the joined the aerial dance as well.

"The time will come

"when you'll have to rise

"above the best and prove yourself,

"your spirit never dies!"

The King and Queen happily partook in the festivity and were soon looping and spinning around each other, dancing together. The dragons of Berk all took off into the skies and joined all the others, empowered by the music. Although they were worried their riders would miss out on the fun-since they had no wings-so they snatched up their respective riders in their talons. All except Toothless and Hiccup, for obvious reasons.

"Farewell, I've gone to take my throne above,

"but don't weep for me

"'Cause this will be

"the labor of my love"

Toothless turned to Hiccup and gave him puppy-dog eyes, silently asking if he could go up there too. Hiccup smiled a sincere smile. "Come on bud, let's show them how alphas do it", Hiccup smirked. They were the last ones to join the skies. The night was filled with dragons as they dodged and moved around each other with ease, feeling the music reverberating within their souls. The mountain-nest dragons joined Chris, chanting the chorus in the dark of night.

"_Here we are, don't turn away now,_"

"_we are the warriors that built this town._"

"_Here we are, don't turn away now,_"

"_we are the warriors that built this town_"

"_From dust._"

Then the dragons started doing group maneuvers, following each other in lines, and copying each other's moves correspondingly. Then the dragons formed many rings, stacked on top of each other, forming a

vertical tube. They started singing a different section of the song, contrasting from the original melody. During that time, Windwalker and Chris zoomed and flipped and zipped in all directions. Sometimes Chris would jump out of the saddle and 'fly' by himself for a few seconds before Windwalker would catch him. They knew each other's moves and trusted each other with their lives. They flew expertly, but more importantly, they flew as one. At the pinnacle of their flight, they ended up at the top of the tube, but were hovering upside down! Windwalker was flying 'backwards' by doing upstrokes instead of down strokes to keep her afloat. Chris was standing on the saddle, hooking his feet into certain parts of it to keep him from falling off.

"_Here we are, don't turn away now,_"

"_we are the warriors that built this town._"

"_Here we are, don't turn away now,_"

"_we are the warriors that built this town_"

"_From dust. "_

As the song reached its climax, the dragons started to go crazy. The all tried to pull off their most insane aerial trick they could before it all ended. Chris unhooked himself from the saddle and fell, with Windwalker following close behind.

She caught up to him and matched his speed. They looked at each other and smiled-much like Hiccup and Toothless-before Chris remounted Windwalker, preparing to land.

All the dragons went into a dive, heading for the Scorch. A thunderous boom filled the night sky as the thudding of all the dragons could be heard. Then they all simultaneously spread their wings triumphantly and roared gallantly.

Chris advanced towards his allies. "So, what do you think?"

"I haven't had that much fun since I first went flying with Cloudjumper", Valka laughed as she patted her dragon's neck.

"I'm glad some of you enjoyed it", Chris stated as he noticed some of the sour looks he saw plastered on certain Viking individuals, i.e. Snotlout.

"This is certainly a night to remember", Serenity said fondly.

"Oh it will be, once we are done with the celebration", Chris said with a smirk.

"Uhh, when does this thing end?", Tuffnut huffed.

"I don't know. Ask your dragons", Chris snickered as he mounted Windwalker and continued with the celebration.

"_Don't tell me that's all you got",_ Windwalker complained as she watched the queen. Aurora on the other hand, was grunting and struggling. She was breathing heavily, trying to fulfill her task.

The group traveled to the sparring cliff the next day-where they first met Chris-to watch Aurora unlock her Titan Wing. The cliff was overlooking the forest below. It was a sheer 10-story drop, down the steep mountainside.

Aurora was armorless, revealing her sapphire blue scales and tropical blue underbelly. Attached to her was a harness. The harness had long metal chains attached to it. Those long metal chains had huge boulders wrapped around the opposite end of each of them. The chains that were currently in use were dangling off the edge of the cliff, dragging anything attached to it to the ground.

"_Come on Aurora, it's simple. All you have to do is hold up rocks. That shouldn't be that hard", _ Windwalker said innocently.

"_I'd like to...to see you do this", _Aurora gritted, struggling against the weight of the boulders.

"_Well, I'm not asking what you want to happen, I'm __telling_ _you what is going to happen"_ , Windwalker shot back. She nodded to Chris. He sighed as he held up another chain and attached it to the harness.

"Come on mom. I looked up to you and Dad as the strongest dragons I have ever met. I know you can do this mom!", Chris said hopefully as he attached the chain. He went over to the edge of the cliff and nodded to another dragon. That dragon then pushed the boulder that was resting on the edge of the cliff, over the edge.

Aurora yelped as she was dragged back a couple of feet. She dug her claws into the ground, preventing her from falling over the edge.

"_Don't worry Aurora. If you fail, my dragons will rescue you. By that, I mean they will only sever the chains that bind you. If you can fly back up her afterwards, that'd be great. However, considering all the weight you are carrying, you probably are going to be very tired and will most likely fall to the ground. But you shouldn't feel a thing since your armor-, oh wait"_ , Windwalker giggled complacently.

Aurora stared daggers at Windwalker.

Windwalker got right into the queen's face. "_If you are going to be mad at anyone, be mad at yourself, for not being able to complete your task"_ , Windwalker expressed matter-of-factly. She nodded again at Chris and in a few moments, Aurora was yanked back a couple of more feet, almost near the edge.

"_I...I-"_ , Aurora wheezed.

"_Yes. You. Can."_ , Windwalker interrupted. She nodded at Chris and again, another boulder was added. Aurora clenched her eyes, as she was dragged to the edge. Her hindpaws just a dangerous inch away from the edge. She growled and snarled, trying her best to heave the weight back on top of the cliff.

But alas, she felt herself, millimeter-by-millimeter, being dragged to her seemingly inevitable fate.

"_Well how about this. I never knew that the queen was weak! As the daughter of Lord Draco, I expected much more out of you. Re, I thought as the king of Draconia you would've pick a stronger mate. Oh well, not all dragons can't be strong"_ , Windwalker provoked.

Aurora snapped open her eyes and her pupils turned into slits. She was fuming! She started to steadily pull the rocks back up the cliff. Windwalker activated her Titan Wing and focused all of her power on Aurora.

"_One more"_ , Windwalker declared, not removing her gaze from Aurora.

Chris gulped, "Windwalker don't you think-"

"_I said one more!"_ , Windwalker seethed.

Chris sighed in defeat and hooked the last chain onto the harness. Using a big stick as leverage, he pushed the boulder over the cliff himself. The metal chain jerked against her harness, setting her back to where she was just an inch from plummeting.

"_Do not let some rocks dictate your life! Embrace your Titan Wing! Focus on it. Let the feeling control your body. Do not fight it, accept it! "_ , Windwalker asserted.

Aurora closed her eyes. She started to feel her body changing. She felt a surge of energy flow through her veins. But as she started to morph, the weight proved too much to bear and she was hauled over the cliff.

"_AURORA!"_ , Re yelled. He spread his wings to take off.

"_No need to interfere, Re. She is doing fine",_ Windwalker spoke slyly, gazing over the edge of the cliff, and consequently stopping Re.

For the ones who could not understand Dragonese, what confused them was that they didn't hear the thud of the rocks that were suppose to hit the ground. What they heard instead was loud flapping from the side of the cliff. What they saw next startled them.

Aurora consistently rose into the air, carrying the weight of 7 boulders! She rose high enough until all 7 rocks were above the ledge, then she flew towards the group and landed on her feet, with a thud. Chris and Serenity quickly rushed in and removed the harness from her body. Once they did that, they stood back and admired her new form.

Since Aurora was a Whippertail like Re, her Titan Wing was similar to his. Her tropical blue underbelly turned gainsboro gray. Her horizontally straight-ridged underbelly was now shaped like horizontally-stretched, upside-down V's. Every other ridge extended her new, grey scales up around her body, and just like her mate, stopped along his spine, forming incomplete circles. Her tail grew longer and a third of her tail was now covered in gainsboro gray scales. Her horns were longer and the membrane between her wings matched the color of her underbelly. Her forehead now had a small gray arc on her forehead. Under her eyes, there were 2 obtuse grey

triangles, one for each eye. Unlike Re, her arc opened upward instead of downward.

Re rushed forward and nuzzled his mate.

"_I know you had it in you, Aurora. Literally and figuratively speaking. I love you"_ , Re spoke softly.

Aurora purred and nuzzled him back lovingly.

That night the dragons and vikings slept peacefully, knowing that tomorrow was going to be an eventful day. Tomorrow the Berkians and Draconians were going to leave the mountain-nest and go back to their old lives. Too bad, Gaozong was approaching the nest with his legion of Song troops marching behind him. Tomorrow was going to be an eventful day indeed!

****Whoever can guess the song I used will get a free plate of the Thanksgiving meal my family and I prepared! Lol.****

23. Chapter 23

****Hello. Once again, enjoy and read. And forgive my mistakes.****

Windwalker yawned as she woke up. She lifted her head up and looked around the cave. No one was there, except her rider who was sleeping next to her. She looked down at him and smiled kindheartedly before she got up and stretched her wings. Even though it was dark, she was able to see perfectly because of her keen, dragon eyes. She flew out and spiraled down the numerous caves in the Trunk. She gracefully landed at the bottom, not wanting to wake up the sleeping dragons. Although they won the war, she was sad. Today was the day that Tenor would leave. Today was the day everything would go back to normal.

'Maybe he'll visit!', Windwalker thought happily.

'...or maybe he won't', she finished.

She flew into one of the tunnels. She ended up on one of the lower ledges outside the mountain. It was smaller than the sparring ledge, but it was perfect to just sit down and doze off on. She sighed, sat on her haunches, and gazed at her surroundings.

"_Good morning"_ , greeted a familiar voice.

Windwalker turned to see Tenor at the mouth of the tunnel. He was about to step forward, but stopped himself.

"_Mind if I join you?"_ , he asked politely.

Windwalker smiled, "_Of course you can"_ . She scooted over to make room for him as he came next to her.

He sat down on his haunches and looked out, watching the morning sun trying to break through the horizon.

"_It's a beautiful site"_ , Tenor commented,

"_Indeed it is. That's one of the things that I like about here",_ Windwalker informed.

"_What are the other things?"_, Tenor inquired.

"_Well, there is this mountain. I like this mountain. It's strong, big, and steady. Another is the dragons that inhabit the mountain. Even though they can easily take care of themselves-more so now that most of them unlocked their Titan Wings-they choose to be loyal to me. I, I can't thank them enough for choosing to believe in me. Even when I feel like I don't measure up to being their alpha, they, as well as this mountain and the surrounding environment, remind me why I continue being alpha"_

"_And what would that be?"_

"_Me being apart of a family. They are my family. We look out for each other. So it is my duty as a member of this family, to protect them"_ , Windwalker explained.

"_The bonds we create with others help define us. They explain who we are, and how we act towards others. Family, isn't just who has what blood running through their veins. Whoever stands by your side when the world breaks down into chaos and destruction, they are your family"_ , Tenor said boldly, staring into Windwalker's eyes.

"_I couldn't have put it better myself"_ , Windwalker beamed, staring back.

Windwalker's face faltered as she reminded herself that he and his group will be leaving in a bit. She turned and faced the forest.

"_You and your group have earned a place here. You guys can come back anytime you like"_

Tenor exhaled. "_I'm glad to have met you, Windwalker. You and your nest have definitely proved that Re, Aurora, and I need to let other dragons know that Draconia is not a myth. That it is and will forever be their homeland. Their second home"_

"_I am glad to have met you too, Tenor. And I am sorry for not being able to unlock your Titan Wing in time"_

Tenor grinned at her. "_Don't worry about it. Now that your nest and Berk have an alliance, I am sure we will see each other in the future. Maybe then you can unlock it"_

She grinned back, "_Do you think you can promise me that you won't die until then?"_

"_Of course. I promise"_ , Tenor chuckled.

"_Although, that was dumb promise to ask of you. You are a strong, smart, energetic, cool-headed, and cunning dragon, who never backs away from a challenge. You will surely be alive when we next meet",_ Windwalker remarked.

Tenor blushed.

"_You care deeply about the ones you love and you get extremely protective over them when they are threatened. I can't even fathom what you would do if someone were to endanger your mate"_ , Windwalker continued.

"_I do not have a mate"_

"_Oh"_ . Now it was Windwalker's turn to blush. "_Why is that?"_ , Windwalker asked quietly after a few moments.

"_Well, I have not found one...yet. No female has caught my attention"_ , Tenor lied.

"_What catches your eye then, Tenor?"_

"_I seek a mate who can 'keep up with me', so to speak. She has to be smart, strong-willed, loving, brave, and stubborn"_ , Tenor told Windwalker.

"_Stubborn?"_ , Windwalker chortled.

"_Well, yeah. By that I mean she is persistent. If she faces adversity, she will not stop until she beat it. I want a mate who won't immediately run away from a problem. She would have to try every option before she admits defeat. And even then, she won't ever give up. Even if she is fighting to her last breathe. She kind of has to be strong, in all aspects"_

"_Don't you think that is a tall order to fill?"_ , Windwalker questioned.

"_No. In fact, I think I will find one very soon"_ , Tenor hinted.

"_She will be a very lucky dragon when she has you Tenor"_

Tenor was about to ask Windwalker a very important question. One that will change their lives forever. He looked into her eyes again, admiring her. Just as he opened up his maw, a loud boom echoed through the tunnel.

They both looked into the direction of the tunnel, then looked back at each other. They flew through the tunnel as fast as they could. They reached the Trunk within moments, and found it filled with dragons scrambling in every direction.

The Berkians and Draconians flew down to meet up with Tenor and Windwalker.

"_What's going on?"_ , Aurora asked worriedly.

"_I don't know"_ , Windwalker stated honestly. She spotted Tiir who was just returning from outside.

"_Tiir, what is happening outside?"_ , Windwalker demanded.

"_It's the Song. They're here!"_ , Tiir replied urgently.

"_What?!"_ . Windwalker zoomed out of the Trunk with the rest of the

group behind them. She went up to the tallest ledge the mountain had and landed, quickly peering over the ledge. She was motionless as the sight before her.

"_No_", she uttered as the rest of the group caught up with her.

Coming toward the mountain was an army of Song soldiers. They brought all the cannons, catapults, arrows, and weapons they could. The rest of the group had horror written on their faces.

Just then they witnessed a big, round, solid black ball flying toward the mountain. It had a short chain with a smaller sphere at the end attached to it. That smaller sphere was engulfed in flames. Once the black ball hit the mountain, it exploded into black dust. But before the dust could spread anywhere, the flaming sphere touched the black dust and immediately an explosion rocked the mountain. The dust could now be identified as Huo Yao. The group almost lost their balance as they felt it.

Chris quickly mounted Windwalker.

"We need to evacuate", Re told Windwalker.

"_We need to defend!_", Windwalker roared.

"We can do both!", Chris said as he looked at Windwalker. "I need you all to come with me", he announced to the his allies as he flew off.

The rest of the group did as they were told and followed the two as they went back into the mountain.

"Tiir, I want you and a couple of others to evacuate all the young, and injured dragons out of here. You will follow the stormcutter and her rider", Chris barked to the rest of his nest.

"_Understood!_", Tiir shouted back before disappearing.

"_The rest of you, let us remind the Song to stay dead!_", she ordered. The dragons roared and growled their understanding before whizzing out of the mountain.

"Valka, Cloudjumper, and Serenity, can you all lead our young, and injured dragons out of here and somewhere safe?", Chris asked urgently.

"We will try", Valka said as she got on Cloudjumper

Chris got off of Windwalker and swiftly hugged Serenity, who reciprocated the action tightly.

"Be safe", he whispered.

"Don't worry. Go", Serenity said as she got on Cloudjumper, behind Valka, and they flew off.

"Everyone else, let's move", Chris stated as he swung back onto Windwalker's saddle and they took off.

As they escaped the mountain, they were greeted with a massive battle. Dragons were swooping low to the ground, trying to kill as many Song troops as they can. Some were lucky, others weren't. They would claw and flame any Song that they approached.

The group entered the battle, trying to push back the Song as best as they could.

Aurora, Hiccup, Fishlegs, Snotlout, the Twins, and their dragons were destroying as much aerial weapons the Song possessed as possible. Re, Tenor, Astrid, Chris, Eret, and their dragons were on the ground, defeating as many soldiers as they could handle.

The hundreds of the mountain-nest dragons could not compete against the thousands of the Song soldiers. Soon, the dragons were dropping like flies to the ground, dead. Some bled out to death, others weren't as lucky.

Windwalker observed the battle around her.

"_Activate your Titan Wing now!_", she howled in a desperate attempt to beat the Song. The dragons did as they were told and changed. With their now boosted power, the dragons were re-energized and fought back with more valor. At one point, it seemed to work, as the dragons were mowing down the Song. The screams of dragons were being replaced with screams of the Song. That is, until they started firing a new type of weapon. They were called 'fire lances'. They looked like oddly-shaped spears with a black, metal section at one end. Armed with Huo Yao, it discharged a blast of flame and shrapnel. The dragons were easily being overwhelmed

Their numbers were stacked against them. As strong as they were, they could not put up with the endless horde of soldiers. Again, the dragons were being slaughtered left and right and their screams filled the sky once more.

Chris was doing his best skewering and slashing at as many men as he could. But even then, they had managed to leave a few wounds on him. He scanned the battlefield, thinking that the unavoidable was going to happen. Then, he spotted a familiar face. As he recognized it, he trembled with rage as he went up to him.

Windwalker was starting to get tired, even with her Titan Wing activated. She noticed that more and more of her brothers and sisters were dying and there was nothing she could do about it. No! She could do something about it!

Windwalker had to face the facts, she was outnumbered and outmatched.

"_Retreat!_", Windwalker screeched sadly, "_To the nest!_"

Her dragons executed that command eagerly and flew away, trying to escape. The Song were relentless though. They did not stop their assault and chased them back. The dragons hurriedly flew back to their nest, aiming to protect it with all their might, but alas, the Song had gotten their first.

During the battle, some Song soldiers and artillery were able to get past the onslaught of the dragons. They then found one of the

entrances and infiltrated the mountain. They used some Huo Yao tanks that weren't at the supply camps and placed them in the Trunk of their nest. As the dragons tried to retreat to their last line of defense, the tanks were soon detonated. The ensuing explosion soon billowed out of the several tunnels that lead into the nest, at rapid speeds. The explosion was so gargantuan that it threw off some of the dragons' flight patterns. What happened next was horrible. The tunnels started to collapse on itself, and the caves within it. Smoke and dust filled the skies. The dragons were terrified, watching their home being destroyed right in front of them. They moaned and cried out in pain.

Windwalker stiffened as she watched the nest, her home, crumble away before her. She stopped the tears from escaping her eyes as she yelled out another order. "_Retreat to the young and injured...and don't look back"_, she commanded emotionally.

Using their noses, they followed the scents of their young and injured. They landed a couple of miles west of their destroyed nest. They reunited sadly, mourning the loss of their beloved nest as well as the dragons who were killed today. Out of the 800 or so dragons that occupied the mountain-nest, 274 of them died. Out of the 400,000 or so Song, the dragons managed to kill about 10,000 of them. Their home was gone. They were hopeless.

24. Chapter 24

I'm proud of myself. I did two chapter in one day, one long day. Anyways, read and respond please. And enjoy...

Windwalker landed. Her breathing was labored. Tenor and the others rushed to her side as she deactivated her Titan Wing.

"_Are you alright?"_, Tenor asked concernedly.

"_Am I alright? Am I alright?! My nest is destroyed; About 300 of my brothers and sisters are dead; The other two-thirds of my nest are emotionally distraught and homeless. Some of my dragons have no family to return to. And what bothers me the most is how in the world did the Song find our nest, and you have the audacity to ask me if I AM ALRIGHT?!"_, Windwalker shouted in Tenor's face

"_Windwalker...calm down"_, Tenor pacified.

Windwalker's eyes turned to slits. "_Did you just tell me to calm down?"_

"_Windwalker, there is no point in fighting. What we need to do right now is move your people to safety and find out how the Song were able to find your nest"_, Re interjected.

"I know how those bastards were able to locate us", fumed Chris as he landed on the back of a different dragon. He dismounted and stomped toward them. He was holding something behind his hand. He approached Hiccup and threw something hard at him. Hiccup fumbled with the thing in his hands and when he finally was able to hold onto the object properly, he realized it was a severed head. But it wasn't just any severed head. He realized he saw that face before. He yipped and

briskly dropped it as soon as he found out what it was, but once he did so his face was met with Chris's fist.

Hiccup groaned in pain as he fell to the ground. Chris jumped on top of him and started punching Hiccup. Toothless immediately knocked Chris off of Hiccup and curled his tail around him defensively and snarled at Chris. Chris rapidly bounced back up and ran to Hiccup in a rage.

Re ran up to him and held him back. Chris immediately tried getting around his father.

"_Son, what are you doing?!"_, Re blurted out.

"I'm going to kill him!", Chris yelled.

"No you're not", Astrid growled, standing in front of Hiccup, readying her axe.

"_Why are you trying to kill him?"_, Re asked.

Chris shoved his father back. "_Because he led them here!"_

"What?", asked Valka.

"Your chief Hiccup, caused them to locate my nest. That head belonged to a Song soldier. A Song soldier that was escaping one of the attacks on the Huo Yao supply camps we destroyed. I asked Hiccup if he could catch up to him and kill him. Your leader said yes and since he was the chief, I figured he would have no problem doing so. I was wrong. Your chief is nothing but a coward!", Chris said with venom.

"What?! That's not true. Is it Hiccup?", Astrid questioned as she faced Hiccup.

.

Hiccup closed his eyes and sighed, nodding slowly. The rest of the mountain-nest heard the commotion and gradually gathered around them.

"I found this in his pocket", Chris said sourly as he threw some black scales on the ground

The whole group was baffled when they realized it was Night Fury scales. They eventually were able to piece it all together as to how the Song was able to find them.

"You will pay!", Chris seethed as he rushed at Hiccup again. Re blocked him and pushed him back.

"Chris, I couldn't-", Hiccup started as he stood up.

"That's the point. You couldn't. You are a weak, pathetic excuse for a man. You are nothing but a coward. You don't deserve to be chief!", Chris shrieked.

"And now because of your weakness, many dragons are dead. You caused all of this pain and suffering! You ruined our lives", Chris

wepted.

Hiccup did nothing but bare a sad face.

"You and your tribe are hereby banished from the nest. If we so happen to catch you glancing our direction, you will be slaughtered on the spot", Chris fumed.

The Berkians and Draconians gasped.

"_Chris please, there has to be some other option"_ , Re begged.

"Are you siding with him?", Chris criticized.

"_Chris, listen to me-"_ , Re began.

"Are trying to justify his actions? Are you saying what he did was right", Chris yelled.

"_Chris you need to understand that-"_

"Are you hearing this people? My father would rather side with his friend than his own SON!"

The mountain-nest dragons were astounded by this news and started conversing.

"_My son listen! Hiccup did not know this was going to happen"_

"If he had done what I had asked of him, none of this wouldn't have happened!"

"_If you would just-"_

"_Leave"_ , Windwalker interrupted.

"_What?", _Re asked, stunned.

"_If your allies broke our trust, then how can we trust you Draconians?", _Windwalker questioned, tears threatened to spill out.

"_Windwalker, you can't-"_

"_I damn well can. And considering the looks of my nest, they don't want any of you here either"_ , Windwalker said, gesturing to her pact.

The mountain-nest were growling and taking on fighting stances.

"_Get the hell out my sight",_ Windwalker boiled.

The group looked around worriedly. Re looked at his son, hoping he would do something.

Chris indeed did something. He looked back at him with hard eyes and pointed out toward the forest. 'Leave' was all that he uttered.

The allies looked at each other and took to the skies. The only ones

who were left on the ground were the Draconians. Re continued staring at his son, failing to break the gaze.

"I'm not repeating myself leave", Chris shouted. He looked over to Serenity who gave him a sad look. He shook his head and drew out one of his swords.

"Don't make me", Chris sobbed angrily.

Re, after a moment, finally broke his gaze and took to the skies. His family following him, except Tenor.

"Come on Tenor, let's go", Serenity said sadly.

He stood his ground, eyes closed, refusing to move.

Windwalker approached him, "_Leave"_"

Tenor opened his eyes and looked at her. "_No"_"

"_I am not telling you again"_"

"_I need you to listen to me. You are making a grave mistake if you wish to engage the Song again"_"

"_And who do you think you are, telling me what I can't and can do?"_"

"_I know for a fact that you won't listen to reason. And I will do as whatever it takes to make you listen", _Tenor stated that he got into a battle stance. "_I won't let you foolishly hurt yourself"_"

Windwalker opened her eyes wide, "_Are you challenging me, for alpha?"_"

"_I won't let you hurt yourself. And this is the only way you will ever listen: by fighting"_"

Windwalker closed her eyes painfully. She then hardened her expression and opened her eyes. Her pupils were slitted; she was fueled with predatory instinct.

"_Serenity, step back"_, Tenor ordered. Serenity did so, but was really upset. She really hated when dragons fight.

"_I will do whatever it takes to ensure my nest's safety. Nobody will stand in my way, not even you Tenor"_, Windwalker said darkly, activating her Titan Wing.

"_Not unless I am the one who commands them", _Tenor shot back as he rushed toward Windwalker.

Tenor attacked with full force. Windwalker rammed into him and threw him back. He bounced back onto his feet and charged again. He threw some plasma blasts at him but Windwalker easily dodged them. She threw some too but he evaded them as well. Once he got close enough he pounced on Windwalker. They rolled into a ball, clawing at each other. They tossed and turned until Tenor pinned Windwalker down and held his venomous teeth dangerously close around her neck. He had no

intention of killing her, but decided to hold her neck in his jaw, until she surrendered.

However Windwalker placed her hindpaws on his chest plate and thrust him into the air just as he was about to end it. Tenor yelped as he was taken off-guard. As he was launched in the air, Windwalker quickly threw a boosted plasma blast at him. Even though he was wearing armor, the blast still caused him pain. It hit him in the chest, knocking the wind out of him. He was sent flying higher into the sky. Windwalker got up and threw her remaining two plasma blasts at him, sending him flying higher into the sky, stunning him. She quickly launched herself in the air and caught up to him. She wrapped her forepaws around his neck, angling his venomous teeth away from her and wrapped the rest of her body around him, preventing him from escaping. They soon started falling back to the ground, with Tenor struggling along the way. His attempts were futile as he approached the ground.

Tenor slammed onto the ground hard with a painful thud- even more so with the added weight of an additional Night Fury on him. He tried to lift his throbbing head, but was pushed back down to the ground by one of Windwalker's paws. She snarled as she clasped her teeth around his neck.

"NOO!", Serenity stated on the verge of tears. "Don't kill him!"

Windwalker looked all around her. She saw her pact staring at her. She saw the scared looks on her allies' faces. She saw the eyes of the Draconians-including Chris-silently pleading her not to end his life.

She looked down at Tenor, who tensely was awaiting his fate. She snorted and released her hold on him.

"_I will not kill you. There has been enough death today",
_Windwalker announced as she got off of him.

The Draconians all rushed towards Tenor and helped him up. Chris on the other hand, went back to Windwalker's side. Tenor looked into the gaze of Windwalker.

"_Get out of my sight, you...mutt"_ , Windwalker choked out.

Tenor's jaw dropped slightly. He was...hurt. That comment hurt him, probably more than any physical wound he ever had on his body.

The Draconians took to the sky and flew off with the Berkians.

Windwalker, Chris, and the rest of the nest watched as their 'allies' flew off over the ocean.

Windwalker sighed heavily as she turned around to address her pact.

"_What now?"_ , a bystanding dragon asked. The pact nodded at his question.

"_We will find a safe place to rest our bodies until our fires are

replenished. In the meantime, we will...we willâ€¦"

"We will what?", another dragon asked.

"We will fight back!", Chris said bravely.

The whole pact gave him looks of shock.

"Not now of course. Later, once we we get our strength back. I have an idea I would like to share with you", Chris declared.

The Berkians and Draconians flew in silence as the headed back home. The silence grew uncomfortable. After half an hour, Hiccup couldn't stand it anymore.

He landed Toothless in a nearby clearing and got off. He grabbed his hair angrily as he huffed.

The rest of the group landed with worry.

"Hiccup what's wrong?", Valka asked.

"I'm what's wrong! Chris is right. If it weren't for me, all those dragons would be safe", Hiccup explained.

"You could not have known what was going to happen", Aurora stated.

"If I had just-"

"If you had what Hiccup? Killed that man?", asked Astrid.

"Hiccup. You are an excellent chief. You are a compassionate, intelligent young man. You are a kindred spirit, like Serenity. I admire that you choose not to kill anybody", Re said.

Hiccup looked at Re and sighed.

"That's all I will ever be. All I will ever amount to: a hiccup", Hiccup said to no one in particular.

"Hiccup, you are more that. Toothless was the one who helped you see that. You two have proved that you have whatever it takes to face a problem. You were able to kill a tyrannical queen. You were able to stop a madman from using dragons to conquer the world", Astrid declared, placing her hand on Hiccup's shoulder.

"Well, it was me AND Toothless", Hiccup corrected.

"Exactly. Whenever you and Toothless are together, you both can do anything", Astrid smiled as she gave Hiccup a quick kiss.

"...And anybody here can attest to that", she added.

Hiccup looked around at his friends. He eyed each and every one of them, remembering all the interactions he had ever had with them. His eyes finally landed on Toothless. They stared at each other for awhile. Hiccup reminisced and smiled at all the memories he had of Toothless. At last, he spoke.

"What do you say bud, do you think we are going to stay by and watch a war without doing a thing about it?", Hiccup grinned.

Toothless wagged his tail and warbled, his eyes filled with determination.

"I take that as a 'no' then", Hiccup chuckled as he scratched under Toothless' jaw.

"_That's the Hiccup I know_", Re said happily.

"So Hiccup, what do you have in that noggin of yours?" Eret said in his thick, British accent.

Hiccup smirked, "Here's the plan.."

25. Chapter 25

Gaozong and his troops were marching their way back to their capital city. Gaozong bore a smug grin. He was happy that his recent attack 6 hours ago proved to be successful. He knew that if they were smart enough, they would back off. But considering if that human man was there with them, they could possibly attack again.

'Bǎ¹guǒzhǐn. Wǒ' zhǐ. xiǎozhǐng huǒmiǎn tǎmen suǒyǒu de, rǎnguǒ tǎmen huǎ-lǎji (No matter. If they come again, I will just destroy them all)', Gaozong thought darkly.

They continued their march. After an hour of marching, they stopped in a narrow, rocky valley to rest.

"Wǒmen huǎ tǎng zǎi zhǎnlǐ. xiǎoxǎn. Nǎn yǒu 3 gǎn xiǎozhǐng-, yǒ. zhǎnyǎng zuǎ². Wǒmen huǎn kuǎi jǐhuǎ jǎ-xǎ jǎ-njǎn kǎifǎng bǎngwǒzhǐn. Wǒ' bǎ-xǎ yǒ jǎn qiǎ tǎn, zǎi cǎi (We will stop here and rest. You have 3 hours to do so. We will continue our march to Kaifeng at nightfall quickly. I must negotiate with the Jin, again)", Gaozong announced to his army.

Another hour or so past. The sun was beginning to set on the horizon. Everything was uneventful, until they heard the roars of dragons. The whole military was on high alert, arming themselves with their deadly weapons. They looked up towards the sky, but not a single dragon was in the air. That scared them. They could not locate where their enemy was coming from.

Suddenly, a desolate rumble could be heard coming from above. They looked up just in time to see a bunch of massive rocks fall from above. The Song screamed and ran, trying to avoid being squashed. Some of them were able to evade those massive boulders, others weren't so lucky and all that could be heard were their cut-off screams as they were crushed.

Then, more and more massive boulders started falling from all around them. The Song body count was starting to rise. Out of the dust, Gaozong was able to recognize dragons in the sky. A group of 2 or 3 of them would fly towards a side of the valley and unleash their fireballs at once. Then the surrounding rock would break apart and fall down onto his men.

"Lǎ³ng! Huç'zǎ•i yuçžnchǎ@ng wç"qǎ- de tiǎ•nkǎ•ng! (Dragons! Fire the long-range weapons at the sky!)", Gaozong ordered, pointing at the sky.

His men did as they were told. They pointed their catapults at the sky, armed them with the Huo Yao balls, set the adjacent spheres on fire, and launched them into the sky. Their counterattacks worked, somewhat. Some dragons did get knocked down into the sky, but the following explosions made the situation even worse. It caused more rocks to fall onto them, killing even more Song soldiers.

Gaozong seethed as his plan backfired on them. A good number of his troops died because of his poorly-planned counterattack.

"Qiǎ"huǎ n bǎ ozhǎ qiǎ° dǎ o wçžng hǎ@ liǎ°xǎ«ng chuǎ-. Dǎ-miǎ n duǎ• lǎ³ng yuǎ" hçžo, shǎ• tǎ•men! (Switch the explosive spheres to nets and bolas. Ground as many dragons as possible, and slay them!)", he barked.

His troops performed the order quickly and soon began firing nets and bolas into the sky. Although, they were firing blindly since dust and smoke filled the sky. It did not hinder them though, as dragons were roaring and thudding to the ground. Groups of Song troops would rush towards the down, struggling dragons and jab all their weapons into them, effectively killing them.

Even with their strategic attack, the Song's numbers eventually started to trounce the dragons. Windwalker looked around the valley. She observed the Song slaughtering her brothers and sisters yet again. She really hoped Chris would make it in time.

'Hurry up Chris!', she thought to herself.

"Everyone! Activate your- " Windwalker couldn't complete her command as she was hit with a net. She roared in pain as she impacted the ground. She struggled with the net, trying to break free. She blasted the net with a plasma blast and escaped just as a group of Song troops approached her. She flew off with the Song trying to knock her down unsuccessfully.

As she flew up, she noticed that the Song were moving out of the valley and into an open, nearby field. From there, the Song were able to spot the dragons more easily and were soon grounding more and more dragons. The tide started to shift in favor of the Song.

Just then, massive explosions filled the field. Song troops were dying by the dozen. Windwalker looked around, trying to find the source of the explosions. She looked up as a certain dragon-rider duo dived past her. It was Stormfly and Astrid. Stormfly was holding a black sphere similar to the ones that were launched at them not so long ago. She dropped the sphere just as she pulled out of the dive. Right when the ball was about to impact the ground, a Night Fury and his rider zipped through the sky and fired a plasma blast at it. The air was filled with a deafening boom and a bright orange light as the sphere exploded, just as Hiccup and Toothless pulled out of the dive. She noted that her 'allies' were dropping the Huo Yao spheres with the two male Night Furies igniting them-as they were the only ones fast enough to escape the resulting explosion.

"Toothless?!", she shouted abruptly, pulling alongside the human

and dragon alpha.

"Don't think you can get rid of us that easily, girl", Hiccup smirked.

"_Vikings are really stubborn. Once they have their minds fixed on something, they will see to it that nothing stands in their way"_, Toothless chuckled as he looked at Windwalker.

"_You-"_

"_You can deal with us later. Right now, we need to end this once and for all"_, Toothless growled as he activated his Titan Wing.

Windwalker shut her jaw as Toothless was right. She nodded as she flew away. She dive bombed a couple of more troops before she spotted Re dropping another Huo Yao sphere before Tenor ignited it.

Tenor flew a little slower and was consequently engulfed by the explosion but escaped it unscathed a few seconds later, but his armor vanished.

Aurora noticed this and pulled up besides him, with her Titan Wing activated as well. "_What happened to your armor?"_, she asked inquisitively.

"_When I was caught in the explosion, it burnt off the leather straps holding my armor together. Even though my scales are fire-proof, they are not so much heat-proof. My armor would've heated up and branded me, so I shook it off before it did"_, Tenor replied truthfully.

Aurora sighed, "_Just don't get hurt. You are vulnerable, especially without your armor"_"

"_Yes ma'am"_, Tenor answered. She nodded before she departed. Tenor then made his way over to Re.

Meanwhile, Windwalker pulled up alongside Re, who already activated his Titan Wing. "_How did you manage to get these bombs?"_, she asked.

"_When Hiccup showed us the map, he showed us all the mountain range that houses a key ingredient of Huo Yao. Hiccup remembered that he saw a familiar mountain range that we passed when we were attacking the supply camps. So he decided that half of us would go and collect as much of that ingredient as possible. The other half went to the first supply camp we attacked to see if there was anything worth salvagingâ€¦there wasn't any, but we did happen to capture one of the soldiers that was there. Apparently they were there trying to salvage what they could too. We interrogated him, asking how to make Huo Yao. That was difficult since we both spoke different languages. The best he could do was show us the rest of the ingredients. But, with Hiccup's genius, we were able to figure it out"_, Re grinned.

Windwalker was stunned. She, or Chris, would have never thought of that.

Just then, Tenor was shot down by a bola.

"_Tenor!_", Windwalker screeched as she put on a burst of speed.

He crashed to the ground, struggling against his bonds.

He saw Windwalker flying towards him, unfortunately for her, so did Gaozong.

He smirked evilly as an evil thought formed in his mind.

"DÇŽ nÃ hÃ'ilÃ³ng, yÇ• 'lÃ³ng chÇ•' (Hit that black dragon, with a 'Dragon's Teeth')", he told one of his soldiers, who was in charge of a catapult. A 'Dragon's Teeth' was a special type of bola. It was made of thick, twisted metal wire. The bola was lined with sharp, metal spikes jutting out in all directions. The soldier armed the catapult and pointed it toward the speeding Night Fury. He focused his aim on her and launched the Dragon's Teeth a couple of feet in front of her.

Tenor saw it flying towards her. He gasped, "_Windwalker look out!_".

Windwalker looked all around her and her eyes grew wide as she locked onto the projectile that caught up to her. She tried to steer herself away but was too late. Time seemed to slow down as the Dragon's Teeth wrapped itself around her with a whipping sound, lodging the spikes firmly into her body. She cried in agony and fell out of the sky. She hit the ground, about 85 yards from Tenor, with a sickening smack and tumbled a few feet away before she stopped. She wasn't moving, and a group of Song troops were advancing towards her with their weapons raised.

"_NOOO!_", Tenor screamed. He closed his eyes as he started to change. He felt a surge of power flow through him. He snapped open his eyes and growled deeply. He easily broke free of his restraints and sprinted toward Windwalker.

Windwalker groaned in pain. She felt light-headed. She blinked her eyes a couple of times. She turned her head as she heard the Song soldiers coming. She was tried to move but was too much in pain. Her eyes widened as her fate drew nearer. She was scared, knowing that the inescapable was about to happen. When they were within 15 yards of her she closed her eyes, waiting for it to be all over.

What she heard next, perplexed her. She heard a plasma blast explode right in front of here, accompanied by a snarl. She forced open her heavy eyes and what she saw next amazed her.

It was Tenor. He looked different. There were scarlet red, thin markings and lines covering all of his body. But these weren't just any red markings and lines. They were glowing! The scarlet red, glowing pattern was unique. It looked like a bolt of lightning hit Tenor and the proceeding lines streaked and fanned outwards in jagged lines. The lines stopped near the base of his tail, his paws, and his face. All the lines stemmed out from the middle of his back.

He stood protectively in front of Windwalker as the Song soldiers were recovering from the plasma blast. He snarled deeply and bared his black teeth as they recognized who attacked them. They scowled

and raised their weapons, waiting for the other to attack first.

"_Tenor, get out of here"_, she said weakly.

"_No! I am not going to sit by and watch as those monsters kill the one I love!"_, Tenor growled, batting an eye towards her.

"_You, love me?"_, Windwalker choked out.

Tenor nodded.

One of the soldiers sprinted toward the two, trying to take advantage of Tenor being distracted. Tenor snapped his head toward the soldier and fired an enhanced plasma blast. His purple flame was now replaced by the scarlet red color that matched his newly-adorned scales. It hit the man head-on and killed him on impact, sending him flying 100 feet away. The rest of the group looked at each other before they all yelled and rushed Tenor. He growled and lunged at one of them, sinking his highly venomous teeth into the man's neck, instantly killing him. While he did that, he swiped his tail at two approaching soldiers and sent them sailing through the air. Then he fired another red plasma blast at another troop, killing him and sending the last soldier nearby to the the ground. The man sat up and grabbed his head, which was spinning. He was then woken out of his daze by a growl from Tenor. The man opened his eyes and was met by Tenor's deadly gaze. They locked eyes for a moment before Tenor snorted, scaring him. The man yelled and scrambled away, frightened. He smirked but his victory was short-lived as he heard Windwalker groan in pain.

He ran up to her and nuzzled her face. "_Don't worry, we will get you fixed up in no time"_. Tenor quieted.

"_Tenor, I-"_

"_Hush, don't speak. I'm going to take you to Serenity. But I need you to handle the pain as I carry you over to her. Can you do that for me?"_, Tenor asked, gazing into her eyes.

She meekly nodded.

Tenor gently flew above her and wrapped his paws around Windwalker. She hissed in pain. Tenor, with heavy flaps, started to haul her into the sky. Once he was high enough, he carefully flew around the battle towards where Serenity was located, which happened to be where the mountain-nest's sick and injured were.

"_Serenity!"_, Tenor called out. She looked up at the sky and saw that he changed. She also saw that she held Windwalker in his paws. She ran up to them as he tenderly lowered her to the ground. Serenity knelt down as she examined her, trying to deduce how damaged Windwalker was. Tenor stood next to her.

"_Please Serenity, heal her!"_, Tenor begged.

Serenity got out her supplies as she prepared to heal Windwalker. She looked up at him. "I will take care of this. Go! The others need you!", Serenity replied softly.

Tenor nodded and was about to take off when Windwalker stopped him. Her golden eyes met his green ones. "_Be safe_", she whispered hoarsely

Tenor nodded and nuzzled her again before he took to the skies.

Back at the battlefield, the Berkians and Draconians were dropping the last of the Huo yao bombs. Hiccup and Toothless pulled alongside Re as they ignited and dropped the last bomb respectively.

"Where's Tenor?", Hiccup asked.

"_That last I saw him, he was shot down by a bola and Windwalker rushed toward him. I haven't seen them since"_ , Re answered.

Just then multiple red lights caught their eyes. It was Tenor and he was shooting numerous plasma blasts at the relentless Song. The two pulled up besides him.

"_Wow Tenor, you unlocked your Titan Wing"_ , Toothless complimented.

"_Thank you"_

"_Now we know what the Titan Wing of a Night Fury-Blackfang hybrid looks like"_ , Re commented.

"_Enough talk. Let's win this war!"_ , Tenor shouted as he dived towards the ground, shooting out a couple more plasma blasts.

The Berkians and Draconians, with their added firepower, still could not defeat the Song. They simply were too outnumbered. Dragons started falling one by one again. The Berkians did their best to avoid being captured, but it seemed like they would soon join their ancestors in Valhalla. The Draconians fought until they exhausted they started to get reckless. They landed near the Berkians who were fighting off a big group of Song soldiers.

"_Re, it has been an honor serving beside you and Aurora for all of these years"_ , Tenor said as he was running out of shots.

"_Don't give up just yet Tenor!"_ , Re exclaimed as he roasted a row of Song soldiers with his salmon-pink flame.

Just then Gaozong approached the group. "Gǎ•ncuǎ- fǎ ngqǎ-, yǎ>xç" nç• de sç•wǎ;ng jiǎ ng shǎ- wǎ°tǎ²ng (Just give up and maybe your death will be painless)", he chuckled.

"I have no idea what you just said. But we will never give up. We will never stop fighting!", Hiccup said heroically.

Gaozong was just about to order his men to finish them off when a certain someone called him out.

"Hǎ"i tǎ;nggǎ•ozǎ•ng (Hey Gaozong)", Chris shouted from the top of Tiir's back.

"Nç• xiçǒng yǎ o shǎ@nme? (What do you want?)", he shouted back

"Wç' huǎ- lǎ-kǎ•i zhǎ"lç•, rǎ°guç' wç' shǎ- nç• (I'd get out of here

if I were you)", Chris warned.

"YÇ•jǎ- wǎ"ishǎ@me yǎ o zhǎ"me zuǎ²? WÇ' yǎ o huÇ•le nÇ• (And why would I do that? I am about to destroy you)", Gaozong said smugly.

"Yǎ«nwǎ"i nÇ• yǎ o tǎ•ngguǎ² nÇ• de mǎ@ngyÇ'u bǎ"ipǎ n (Because you are about to be betrayed by your allies)", Chris smirked, folding his arms.

Gaozong wore a confused face. His face then turned to one of horror as he heard the battle cries of another army. He looked to the edge of the field and saw a massive army flooding towards him. In fact he recognized their armor. It was the Jin!

Tiir landed and Chris got off, approaching Gaozong. "NÇ• yÇ'u liÇŽng gǎ" xuÇŽnzǎ@: NÇ• kǎ>yÇ• dÇŽ wÇ' de lǎ³ng yǎ-ng, zǎ i jǎ«n sÇ•wǎ;ng, huǎ²zhǎ> nÇ• kǎ>yÇ• tǎ;olǎ- zhǎ"ge dǎ-fǎ•ng nÇ• de gÇ'u mǎ-ng, xǎ«wǎ ng jǎ«n bǎ¹ huǎ- zhÇŽo nÇ• (You have two choices: you can either fight my dragons and win and die by the Jin, or you can escape this place with your pathetic life and hope the Jin won't find you)", Chris stated, delivering an ultimatum.

Gaozong looked down on the ground, considering his options. He sighed frustratedly, and looked at Chris. "NÇ• huǎ- hǎ²uhuÇ• de zhǎ" yǎ«tiǎ•n! (You will regret this day!), he shouted as he made his escape.

The soldiers looked back at the Berkians and Draconians, scared as they were now leaderless. They just smirked back and attacked the soldiers, until they were all dead.

"Tiir, call the dragons off. Return them to our young and wounded", Chris said.

"_You got it_", Tiir responded as she took wing and carried out her task.

"_Chris! You're okay!_", Aurora rejoiced, nuzzling her son.

"Of course mom. I'm sorry I could not join the battle", he apologized as he rubbed his mom's snout.

"Who are they?", Fishlegs inquired.

He let go of his mother and regarded the group. "They are the Jurchen. They are a rebellious group of tribes that inhabit a region not that far from here. They overthrew their overlords, the Khitan Liao dynasty, and declared the formation of the Jin dynasty. Before you guys arrived at the mountain-nest, Kang-Jie informed me that they allied with the Jin against their common enemy, the Liao, and the Jin promised to return some northern territories the Liao controlled. Unfortunately, tensions have been running high between the two. They easily defeated the Liao, but were reluctant in ceding the territories back to the Song because of their military failures. Then, after a series of failed negotiations that embittered both sides, the Jin could not stand them anymore. So, I went to their chieftain, Wanyan Aguda, and proposed a deal", Chris announced to the group.

"Which was?", Valka asked curiously.

"I said that if they helped me and my dragons defeat the Song, we would leave the area and dragons would never bother them again. Since our nest was destroyed, we would have to relocate anyways and leave this place in search of a new nest. Our nest is comprised of all the dragons in this region, so no dragon would bother them once we left. The only other dragons on this land mass are some dragons in a place called 'Europe', and they are located on the other side of this land mass, far west of here! Such a strange name for a country by the way", Chris finished.

With the dragons gone, the Song now had to deal with their allies-turned-enemy, the Jin. With their now reduced army, the Song were smaller than them. They fought with all their might, but alas, the battle was over within an hour with the Jin coming out victorious. Most of the Song were either dead or enslaved. The Berkians and Draconians were surrounded by the Jin. They waited patiently until one man stepped out from the crowd. Chris approached him.

The man was significantly taller and bulkier than Chris. He had a grey hair, and pale eyes. He wore a white-furred hat with elongated ear flaps that went down to his chest. It looked like a weird version of a Bomber Hat. He wore a long-sleeved tunic that went all the way down to his ankles, with a blue dragon etched into the center of it. Black patterns lined the edges and neck of the tunic. He had wrinkles and a big nose. He had a Fu Manchu moustache and a long, slim goat patch on his chin. He was expressionless as he toward Chris.

He was so tall that Chris had to look upwards. They stared at each other for quite a while, before Wanyan extended his hand. Chris looked down then back up at him and shook it firmly.

"Xiǎ"xiǎ"! WÇ' hǎ>n xǎ«nshǎžng nÇ• jǎ«ntiǎ•n zuǎ²le shǎ@nme (Thank you! I appreciated what you did today)", Chris spoke as he let go of Wanyan's hand.

"Gǎžnxiǎ" nǎ-n gǎ>i wÇ'men yǎ«gǎ" jǎ«huǎ-, zhǎ•ngyǎ° dǎžbǎ ile kǎ>liǎ;n de gǎ". Suǎ«rǎ;n sǎ²ng yÇ'u guǎžngkuǎ² de, dǎ n quǎ"fiǎ; zÇ"zhǎ« jǎ«nduǎ-, nÇ• hǎ@ nÇ• de xiǎžolǎ³ng yǎ> mǎ@iyÇ'u dǎžjǎ-tǎ•men (Thank you for giving us an opportunity to finally defeat the pathetic Song. Even though the Song has a vast, but poorly organized military, you and your dragons did well combating them)", Wanyan replied in his gruff voice.

"Suǎ«rǎ;n yuǎ;nliǎ ng wÇ'. Tǎ;nggǎ•ozǎ•ng shǎ"fiǎž liǎ« zÇ'u. WÇ' xiǎ•ngxǎ-n tǎ• chǎ"tuǎ- huǎ- dǎ o shǎ'udǎ« kǎ•ifiǎ"ng (Though forgive me. Gaozong managed to slip away. I believe he is retreating back to the capital city of Kaifeng), Chris said sheepishly.

"Biǎ@ dǎ•nxǎ«n, gǎ•o zǎ•ng bǎ"i zhǎ ogǎ¹. WÇ' gǎ>i wÇ' de jǎ«nduǎ- de lǎ-ng yǎ«bǎ n dǎ o kǎ•ifiǎ"ng, dǎ•ng wÇ'men lǎ-kǎ•i (Do not worry, Gaozong is taken care of. I sent the other half of my army to Kaifeng when we departed)", Wanyan stated.

"Zhǎ" shǎ- fiǎ"ichǎ;ng cǎ•ngmǎ-ng de nÇ• (That's very smart of you)", Chris praised.

"WÇ' zǎ i zhǎ"lǎ• bǎ¹shǎ- yǎ o chǎ@ngwǎ@i nÇ• de pǎ@ngyÇ'u. WÇ' zǎ i

zhǎ"lç• jiǎ•nchǎ- wç' de jiǎ•oyǎ- de yǎ«bǎ¹fǎ"n. Shuǎ• dǎ o zhǎ", nç• yǎ o jiǎ•nchǎ- nç• de. Xiǎ nzǎ i dǎ@dǎ ole zhǎ"lç• zhǎ«qiǎ;n, wç' juǎ@dǎ-ng shǎ•le nç• zǎ-jç• de suç'yç'u (I am not here to be your friend. I am here to uphold my part of the bargain. Speaking of which, you need to uphold yours. Now get out here before I decide to kill you all myself)", Wanyan growled.

"Liçžojiǎ>. Xiǎ"xiǎ" (Understood. Thank you)", Chris said as he bowed. Wanyan bowed back before Chris went back to his group.

"Let's go, now", Chris said as he approached his party. The group didn't hesitate and they all flew off to meet up with the rest of the nest.

The group arrived a few minutes later. They all landed and reunited with each other.

"My friends", Chris declared on Re's saddle, "It is finally over. We won! The Song is defeated! We are safe!"

The mountain-nest cheered and roared in victory, or at least what was left of them. Their dead body count rose another 100. It was now at 374. About half of their nest was gone. As sad as that was, they could ensure that the future would be nothing like they experienced these past 10 years.

Chris dismounted and began searching for Windwalker. He soon started to panic as he could not find her.

"Where's Windwalker? Don't-don't tell me she didn't make it", Chris said quietly to Re.

"Of course she made it, but she was wounded during battle. I took her to Serenity so she could be healed", Tenor explained as he came up to Chris.

"Now why would you think I would die? You think that I'm that selfish as to leave you alone for the rest of your life?", Windwalker said sarcastically as she limped towards the two males, with Serenity helping her.

"Windwalker!", Chris shouted in jubilation.

He ran towards Windwalker and hugged her neck tightly.

She stiffened up in pain, and softly grunted, _"As much as I want to return the gesture, my body hurtsâ€|a lot"_.

Chris quickly released her and brought her head down to his level. He rested his forehead against hers.

"Thanks Windwalker".

"Thank you, Chris".

He let go and faced Serenity.

"Serenity. I am sorry I banished you guys. I just got really emotional and a lot was going through my mind. One of the biggest things that I thought when that happened was how much I hurt you. I,

I forgot that your birth parents threw you out too, all because you were trying to be friends with a dragon. And here you were, doing nothing but helping them. I didn't realize the impact of my words until I saw your face...and that left me heartbroken", Chris said emotionally, looking into her eyes, and cupping her face.

Serenity place her hand on top of the his, rubbing it compassionately. "Chris, you are nothing like my parents and will never be like them. You were always there for me when we were kids at the castle. We did so much together. Whenever something arises, you always pulled through it. I never gave up on you Chris. And I never will", Serenity said dreamily.

Chris stared into Serenity's gorgeous green eyes. He tensed, looking towards her lips, then back at her eyes. Serenity noticed and tensed too. He slowly leaned forward, closing the distance between the two. Serenity started leaning forward too, waiting for it to happen. She closed her eyes, waiting to feel the connection.

Suddenly Toothless came bounding up to them calling her name. _"Serenity, Serenity!"_, Toothless shouted happily. He discovered the two, about to perform that weird action that he sees Hiccup and Astrid do every once and a while, and blushed heavily at their intimate moment.

Their faces turned into looks of disappointment as they regarded Toothless. Toothless opened his jaw but no words came out. Chris huffed, he was tired of always getting interrupted. He wrapped one hand around the small of Serenity's back and drew her closer to him. The hand that was caressing her face grabbed her chin gently as he made her look at him.

He locked eyes fiercely with her and said what he always wanted to say. "Serenity. I love you", Chris said before locking lips with Serenity.

Serenity's eyes bulged out but soon fluttered shut as she returned the kiss with just as much fervor. They held that kiss for a couple of seconds, but to them it felt like an eternity. They broke apart when they needed oxygen. They rested their heads against each other as they breathed heavily, but happily.

"Chris". Serenity said softly, causing him to look back at Serenity, blushing slightly.

"I love you, too", Serenity stated as she kissed Chris. Serenity wrapped her arms around her neck as he wrapped his around the small of her back.

Tenor watched the two contently, happy that they finally admitted the love they had for each other.

"So...you love me huh", Windwalker said coolly as she approached Tenor.

He blushed a little as he turned around. _"Yeah...I, I do"_.

Windwalker looked at him and smiled, _"Well, call me crazy, but I love you too"_, Windwalker said as she nuzzled him. She felt pain

from her injuries but she didn't care, she just found the love of her life.

Tenor laughed merrily and nuzzled her back. _"You are crazy. That's one of the many reasons why I love you"_, Tenor sighed as he rested his head against hers.

"One of the many? I wouldn't mind hearing the other ones", Windwalker purred.

"You will", he stated as he gazed into her golden, honey eyes.

Her eyes softened as she exhaled, remembering what she had to do. _"Tenor, I am truly sorry for attacking you. I really regret that. I want you to know that I would've never killed you. When I had my teeth around your throat I...I just couldn't. My heart wouldn't let me, and if I could, I would take back that incident"_, Windwalker expressed.

Tenor smiled, _"I will forgive you, on one condition"_, he told her.

"And what would that be?", she said in a benevolent voice.

He exhaled, about to finally ask the question he meant to ask her this morning. _"Will you be my mate, from now until the end of time?"_.

She tensed then relaxed, looking up at him. _"I'll fly to the ends of the Earth with you...my mate"_, she said lovingly as she gave him a slow lick across the face.

His face lit up, brighter than all the stars in the night sky. He licked her across the face and nuzzled her neck and face affectionately and fiercely.

Chris approached the Berkians and Draconians, who had nothing better to do.

They stopped what they were doing and looked at Chris.

"Guys, I am sorry for being so rash. I'm sorry for letting my emotions get the best of me. I'm sorry for banishing you guys from my nest. After what happened today, you guys earned your place among our nest. Thank you for risking your lives", Chris said to the group.

Hiccup smiled and approached him. "We're Vikings. It's an occupational hazard", Hiccup chuckled. Chris beamed gratefully as he shook his hand.

"You know even after you banished us, you technically didn't break our alliance", Hiccup added.

Chris turned his head thoughtfully as he recalled his memories. "You're right. I didn't", he laughed. He turned towards his dad who was patiently waiting.

"Dad, I'm sorry for accusing you of things you never did. A lot was going through my mind and I wasn't thinking straight. Can you ever

forgive me?", Chris asked as he hung his head.

Re smiled, craned his long neck down, and nuzzled his son on the shoulder. _"Of course I forgive you son. That's what family is for"_, Re said calmly.

Chris hugged his dad's head but soon let go, a burdening thought on his mind.

"Even though we won this war, it came at a price. Now half of my nest is gone and we are homeless. We have nowhere to go", he said mournfully.

"If you are looking for a home. We can help you there", Re suggested as he looked to his queen.

"Really?", asked Windwalker, curious.

"Yes. There is an uninhabited volcanic island on Draconia called Mt. Vulcan. It's big enough to house you and your nest. You are more than welcomed to move your nest there if you like", Aurora responded.

Windwalker approached them with sincere eyes, and bowed with her head low and wings extended, painfully.

"Thank you R-...my king and queen", Windwalker thanked, _"My nest and I pledge loyalty to you and Draconia and will help out whenever we can. We are grateful for your generosity in providing us a home and helping my nest and I win this war"._

The rest of her nest smiled and did likewise, bowing to show their king and queen high admiration.

Re and Aurora were surprised, but nonetheless happy. They finally earned the mountain-nest's loyalty and respect.

Everyone, albeit dragon or human, was happy. They won the war, peace was restored. No more death, no more suffering. The world finally seemed to be at peace. They were no longer hopeful. They were happy. Happy for the present, happy for the future. They were happy that their lives changed for the better...

26. Chapter 26-Epilogue

****Hello everyone! Let me just say how shocked I am for seeing this story get about 4000 views! I am just overjoyed. Thank you all! Also, I am happy and sad to say this will be the last chapter/epilogue. Please enjoy and like always, forgive any mistakes I have made. It took me awhile to write this chapter, so I hope you like the ending!****

Chris was hyperventilating. He was in his room back at Draconia, but all he saw was the room spinning. His clothes were too tight on his body! Oh gods! His eyes glanced in every direction. His palms and face were sweaty. Out of all the things Chris has ever faced, this may be his most challenging one yet!

A knock came from his door which snapped him out of his

stupor.

"Co-come in", Chris shouted shakily.

The door was opened and Re stuck his head inside, who was looking for him.

"_Chris, are you ready? Your wedding is about to start in half an hour. Hiccup and his tribe are here; It would be best to head down now"_ , Re said softly. He then noticed that his son was having a hard time breathing. He went inside the room to see what was wrong with Chris. Behind him was Tenor. Both of them were not wearing their armor, but instead they were simply wearing their crowns.

"_Son, what is the matter? Are you alright?"_ , Re asked concerned.

"I'm just, I'm just nervous", Chris responded slowly, trying to catch his breath.

Re was relieved the instant he heard what was the problem.

"_Chris, there is nothing to fear"_ , the King chuckled.

"I'm not so sure about that", Chris said.

"_You won a war with no qualms at all. In fact you were rather calm when you faced Gaozong a few months ago!"_ , Tenor exclaimed.

Chris exhaled. His uncle was right. If fact, why was he worrying about all this? If he could bust out of prison with a Night Fury by his side, win a 10 year long war, and come out of all that alive, what was there to worry about?

"_Chris, look at me"_ , Re said.

Chris looked up into his father's eyes, waiting.

"_Chris. I have watched, and raised you for the first 10 years of your life. You and Serenity always managed to get into some type of trouble. Besides that, you are a cunning, strong, brave human. Even when all the odds are stacked against you, you always manage to come out on top. Trust me, once you look into her eyes, all your anxiety will melt away. There is nothing to worry about. This is going to be one of the happiest days of your life"_ , Re said soothingly.

"_And you don't want to disappoint Serenity, do you?"_ , Tenor added.

Chris steeled himself. "You're right. I WILL go through with this. I love Serenity!", he said to himself.

Re laughed kindheartedly, "_Come on now. Let's go"._

They all went down to the front doors of the castle, where the wedding was going to take place.

In front of the castle doors was a huge green, plush yard. The yard was bigger than the cove and sealed off by a set of silver gates. One one side there was the castle doors. They had carvings of dragons all

over them. On the opposite side of the yard was two marble pillars, with a matching arch to connect the two, forming the altar. White silk-like fabric was twirled all the way around the altar, with light green Per Ola Wibergs and light blue Spring Starflowers dotting the altar. The pathway to the altar was lined with many white rose petals.

Most of the Berk populace was there, especially the dragons. They were all excited that their favorite dragon healer had finally taken a mate. The dragons of Draconia were excited as well! After the King and Queen told the kingdom that they brought their long-lost son home, the kingdom rejoiced. Their exhilaration only doubled when he proposed to their best dragon healer, Serenity a month later and she accepted. In other words, it was going to be a big wedding!

The Berkians were on one side of the aisle while the Draconians were on the other. Chris was waiting at the altar with Re and Tenor standing by his side. His usual black attire had some modifications to it. Instead of his slim winter trench coat, he had on a white, long-sleeved tunic. It was embroidered with beautiful black lines that curved and twisted in an ornate pattern. The tunic reached a little below his hips. It was fastened at the waist with a black leather belt with a big buckle. The buckle had the Draconian coat of arms on it. He wore a matching white cape with a black Night Fury in the middle. The Night Fury looked like Berk's Dragon Training Insignia, except there was no red tail fin and the color of the eye was gold. His black pants and black, fur-lined boots remained the same.

"Well, don't you look fancy", Hiccup told him. Hiccup, as the chief of Berk, had many duties and responsibilities. One of them was being a marriage officiant. Hiccup had never done this before and Serenity knew that, so she thought her wedding would be the perfect opportunity.

"Thanks", Chris chuckled nervously. Hiccup noticed that he was anxious.

"Chris, calm down. You will do fine. If anyone should be nervous, it should be me. I am the officiant, and this is my first time.", Hiccup consoled.

Chris exhaled, "You right. I just thought I never thought this day would come, is all. And by the way, thanks for making the rings. I really appreciate it".

Hiccup smiled, "Don't worry about it. Though if you don't mind, I would like to use that idea for my wedding rings when I get married".

"Oh yeah it's fine...so, you are getting married", Chris said in a low voice, smirking.

Hiccup blushed. "Ye-yes. I am. But not now, very soon. Just don't tell anybody okay?", Hiccup whispered hesitantly.

Chris grinned, "You have my word as a dragon rider, as an ally, and as a friend". Hiccup nodded.

Unbeknownst to Hiccup, Re and Tenor heard the whole thing with their

keen hearing. They each smiled.

Then a single roar silenced the whole crowd.

The crowd turned to see the front doors open wide and Aurora walking out and to the side of one door, smiling. Following right behind her was Windwalker, who walked to the other side of the door, smiling. They both waited until the bride stepped out for everyone to see.

Everyone gasped and awed at the sight of Serenity. To say she was beautiful was an understatement! Serenity was wearing a strapless wedding dress made of duchess satin. It was wrapped in an intricate pattern in her abdominal area, but it flowed freely down her skirt. She wore a fitted bodice with a slight flare starting a little bit above her waist, going all the way to the floor. On her abdominal area toward the left side of her body, was a bunch of garnished silk flowers that were part of the dress. The flowers were a very light shade of either blue or green, but the colors didn't stop there. They reached out passed the boundaries of the flowers and onto the rest of her dress. They faded away into the white of the dress once the colors reached the right half of her body and mid-thigh of her legs. They intertwined and danced around each other before they gradually grew faint into the white. In the middle of each silk flower was a small sapphire or emerald gem to compliment each colored flower respectively. She wore a bridal crown of beautiful silver-plated gold with many spires jutting out from it. The veil was attached down and hanging from the back, on top of her gorgeous hair. Her bouquet was comprised of an interesting flower. The flowers had white petals with yellow stigma. She gracefully walked down the aisle, with many Vikings and dragons staring at her, amazed.

"Whoa", breathed Fishlegs.

"She is beautiful", Valka whispered, almost on the verge of tears.

She approached the altar with a smile, with Aurora and Windwalker lining up beside her. She glanced at her husband-to-be, noticing the loving look across his face. She handed her bouquet to her soon-to-be-mother-in-law to hold. Aurora smiled warmly as she took the bouquet and sat on her haunches. Windwalker, Tenor, and Re subsequently followed suit.

Chris took Serenity's hands into his. They both looked at Hiccup, signaling for him to begin. Chris was shaking ever so slightly. How could he be so nervous still?! Then they gazed at each other, and all the fear Chris had washed away. The love they had for each other was extremely evident. Hiccup glanced at the two before he took a deep breath and started.

"Before I start, let me just say how thankful and honored I am for being the marriage officiant for these two. Now, since these two are not Vikings, do not be surprised that their wedding is going to be different. I am more than happy to do this"

The crowd murmured their thoughts for a brief moment before they quieted down.

Hiccup grinned. "Dear friends and family, We are all gathered here

today for a very special occasion. We are here to celebrate the union of Chris and Serenity, two cherished people, in marriage. Through their time together, they have come to realize that their personal dreams, hopes, and goals are more attainable and more meaningful through the combined effort and mutual support provided in love, commitment, and family; and so they have decided to live together as husband and wife."

"Serenity and Chris wanted me to thank you all for being here and to recognize how important each and every one of you are to their relationship. They would also like to recognize all of those who couldn't make it here today as they are certainly missed but not forgotten on this day of celebration"

"Unlike many Viking weddings, these two come together today, not because they are bound by some treaty between two tribes, but because they both feel something for each other. They marry today, because they love each other. In their case, marriage gives permanence and structure to their love. It's a way to tell each other that no matter how much the other snores or how much trouble they got in, they're still in this together. Marriage is more important than the scars on your body. Marriage is telling the person you love that you're not going anywhere and that's a powerful commitment for two people to make to one another"

"A good marriage must be built on the foundation of this commitment. In marriage the 'little' things are the big things. It is never being too old to hold hands. It is remembering to say, 'I love you' at least once a day. It is never going to sleep angry. It is standing together and facing the world. It is speaking words of appreciation, and demonstrating gratitude in thoughtful ways. It is having the capacity to forgive and forget. It is giving each other an atmosphere in which each can grow. It is a common search for the good and the beautiful. It is not only marrying the right partner â€" it is being the right partner"

"The road that has brought Serenity and Chris here today hasn't been easy. It's been filled with challenges that they weren't necessarily prepared for. They had been separated from each other for 10 years yet fate seems to deem them inseparable, and here they are standing before you today"

"Now, these two have prepared vows that they would like to share with each other and for us to bear witness to. They are a way of sharing their love and commitment towards each other in their own words"

Hiccup turned toward Serenity, nodding his head at her to start.

She looked back at Chris and sighed quietly, happy. "Chris, ever since we were little, we always had a connection. We share a deep bond, much like the ones we share for our dragons. Every time we got in trouble, you always took the blame for me. I didn't get why you would purposefully want to get in trouble because of me, but as I grew older I finally knew the answer. You cared about me. Even though I came up with most of those ideas, our bond grew stronger every time you took the blame. You are my best friend. We have shared many things together, and I am happy that we are able to share this moment together, in each other's hands. I have seen you at your best and at your worst, and I have been there to support you all the time. And

that strengthened our bond as well. There is a saying that I thought would best explain the love I feel for you. 'I saw that you were perfect and so I loved you. Then I saw that you were not perfect and I loved you even more'. I vow to always be by your side. Whatever obstacle lies ahead of us, I will make sure we get through it. I look to you for strength, for joy, for support, just as much as you do to me. And I am more than happy to support and be supported by you Chris". Serenity finished lovingly.

Chris was speechless. He had his mouth slightly ajar, then snapped back to reality as he realized she was finished. He took a deep breath and smiled at her.

"Serenity, when I was realized that I was being raised by dragons, I knew that I was going to be different for the rest of my life. I thought I was going to be alone, but then, you came along. You made my life enjoyable. You have made me laugh, cry, angry, and so on. But I wouldn't trade any of that. You have helped me define who I was and who I am now. The only thing I regret is leaving you those 10 years of your life. But I thank Draco that they have brought us together once again. Once I saw your face, I knew that I couldn't let that go. I couldn't let you go. Once I saw you, some type of instinct awoke in me. I need to protect you from all harm. When you came back into my life, a new feeling overwhelmed me. It was the feeling of love. The love I have for you! You are my best friend, and when we reunited, I felt we have become something more. We are like two pieces of a puzzle. We compliment and bring out the best in each other. I could never ask for a better person to love, and share my life with. And what constantly amazes me is how you continue to not give up on me. I am grateful that you love me back. I am grateful that we can be something more than just best friends. I am grateful that I can call you 'my wife'. You will be my one and only wife. I am grateful that I will be the one to hold you in my arms. I am grateful you choose to depend on me, as I do to you. I vow that I will always be there for you. No matter how great the distance, or how dangerous the peril. I will love you unconditionally. Even though I may be a hero to others, but you Serenity, you are my hero. You always have, and always will be", Chris said affectionately.

They got lost in each other's eyes. Hiccup gave them a quick second before he continued again.

"Wedding rings are made precious by our wearing them. The rings say that even in their uniqueness they have chosen to be bound together. These rings are a symbol of love and faithfulness. As they place it on each other's finger, they commit their hearts and souls to each other. The most precious metal symbolizes that their love is the most precious element in my life. The ring has no beginning and no ending, which symbolizes that the love between these two will never cease. Let these rings also be a sign that love has substance as well as soul, a present as well as a past, and that, despite its occasional sorrows, love is a circle of happiness, wonder, and delight. They wear the rings as a reminder of the vows they have spoken today, their wedding day"

Serenity and Chris pulled out the rings they were going to put on each other's fingers and they were absolutely stunning. A month before the wedding, Chris flew over to Berk and paid Hiccup to create his and Serenity's rings. He told Hiccup to come up with rings that no one had ever seen before. Chris held Serenity's ring, and Serenity

held Chris's ring. Each of them were made with the purest of silver and inlaid into the outside of the rings was a twirling and winding Celtic dragon, going all the way around the ring. Each dragon had a different color scheme – black and gold for Chris's ring, and blue and green for her ring. Hiccup smirked at his work, proud that all those hours of labor were not going to waste.

Chris took Serenity's hand and placed the ring onto her ring finger.

"I give you this ring as a symbol of my love and faithfulness. I marry you with this ring, with all that I have and all that I am. I place it on your finger as a visible sign of the vows which have made us husband and wife", Chris announced.

Serenity took Chris's hand and placed the ring onto his ring finger.

"I give you this ring as a symbol of my love and faithfulness. As I place it on your finger, I give to you all that I am, and accept from you, all that you are. I ask you to wear this ring as a reminder of the vows we have spoken today, our wedding day", Serenity declared.

After the exchange of rings, Hiccup knew that it was time to wrap things up. With the biggest of smiles, he boomed, "Friends and family, by the power vested in me, as the chief of Berk and ally of Draconia, I know pronounce these two husband and wife. You may now kiss".

Chris and Serenity were both excited and nervous at the same time. The crowd held their breath, waiting for the marriage to be 'official'. They stared at each other, knowing this was their final moment before tying the knot. They smiled at each other. Chris pulled Serenity close, wrapping his arms around the small of her back, while Serenity fluidly wrapped her arms around his neck. Then, time seemed to slow down as they leaned into each other until finally their lips locked in a passionate embrace.

The audience roared and cheered in a symphony of celebration. Chris and Serenity were now husband and wife! Oh what a momentous occasion it was! The dragons shot fire into the sky and small explosions filled the sky in a spectacle of fire and smoke. Most of the females were crying, even Windwalker and Aurora! Astrid and Ruffnut, being the tough Vikings that they were, only shed one tear when nobody was looking. Snotlout glanced at Aurora and Windwalker and noticed them crying.

He scoffed. "Huh. So typical", he said rolling his eyes.

Astrid, being next to him, overheard this and handled the situation accordingly. She threw her best punch and it successfully connected with his jaw, sending him flying to the ground in sheer pain. He stayed there on the floor, holding his chin soothingly, groaning in pain. Astrid smirked, accomplished.

Chris and Serenity broke the kiss and rested their foreheads against each other. They were both giggling, basking in the feeling of it all. They were now married! But Odin forbid this was the end of the celebration!

Once the cheering died down, Re turned to the crowd and yelled, "_Let us continue the celebration inside the castle. There is plenty of food and entertainment that I am sure all of you will enjoy!"_

At the mention of food, all of them rushed inside the castle, the newlyweds included.

The reception was going smoothly and merrily. Vikings and dragons alike were laughing, eating, and having a good time. Many of the guest approached the newlyweds and congratulated them. While they were preoccupied, Re beckoned for Windwalker to accompany him outside.

"_What is it my king? Is there something wrong?"_, Windwalker asked.

"_No. Nothing is wrong at the moment. I just called you out here to talk to you about some things"_, Re casually responded.

"_And what might those things be?"_

"_Windwalker, after seeing you in action for about a month, I noticed that you are an excellent leader. You handled tasks easily and commanded sternly, but respectfully. You see a problem, and you try to find a solution that benefited your nest the best. The reason why I am telling you this is because I want to reward you"_"

"_Just for being an alpha and running a nest"_, Windwalker said, slightly skeptical.

"_Not only that, but you helped take care of my son when he was all by himself. Even though he knew how to handle himself, he hates being left alone, and you gave him companionship and helped develop him into the man he is today. You gave him friendship at a time when he was lost and isolated. You helped him recover from the loss of his family. You became apart of his family and I sense a strong bond between the two of you, much like Hiccup and Toothless. And for that, I want to make you Captain of the Guard here on Draconia. You are worthy of it. Do you accept?"_, Re explained.

Windwalker's mouth was hanging open. She didn't know what to say. She was stunned! At last, some words were able to escape her mouth.

"_Uh...wow, I...I don't know how what to say. I...thank you for the opportunity and graciously accept"_, Windwalker replied, bowing and stretching out her wings.

Re smiled, "_Rise, Captain"_".

Windwalker got back up and smiled back at her king. "_I will do my best your majesty"_".

"_I expect no less from someone as strong as you. Let's go back inside"_, Re concluded as he started walking.

Windwalker slightly blushed at the comment and followed her king's lead.

They went back to the main ballroom and joined in the festivities. Chris noticed his dragon's shocked expression and went up to

her.

"What's wrong?", he asked, concerned.

"_Your father, the king, just made me the Captain of the Guard", she uttered.

"Oh my gosh, Windwalker. That's...amazing!", Chris blurted out, wrapping his arms around her neck. "I am so happy for you!"

"_I just, wow. I'm still adjusting to it. Do you think I can handle it?"_, Windwalker asked.

Chris just gave her an annoyed look. "Are you really asking me that? Of course I think you can handle it".

Windwalker just chuckled. "_I'm sorry. It's just that I never thought this would happen. I'm not upset, it's just...wow"._

Chris rest his hands under her chin, making her look him in the eyes. "Windwalker, you are the most amazing dragon I have ever had the pleasure of meeting. You have been through a lot and yet you still push on. You always put others before yourself. You definitely earned that position. You are strong and a brave leader. You never cease to amaze me. I love you Windwalker", he said sincerely as he brought her into a hug.

Windwalker was touched. "_Chris, thank you for putting up with me. You are by far the best human I have ever met. You do so much for dragons. I never thought I would ever befriend a human, until I met you. I'm glad you changed my opinion on humans. Not all of you are bad. You are so brave and cunning. You are just awesome. I love you Chris"_, Windwalker replied fondly as she nuzzled him.

Chris proceed to scratch Windwalker around her neck, and she groaned and purred in delight. She returned the favor by giving him a big, slow lick across the face.

"Aw, Windwalker!", Chris whined, wiping most of the saliva off of his face. Said dragon laughed.

Suddenly, a mass of Viking women gathered in a crowd behind Serenity.

"What are they doing?", Tuffnut asked Chris.

"Oh yeah. Serenity wanted to try this new custom. Apparently, brides in Europe do it all the time to pass their good fortune onto another, according to a dragon she once healed. As tradition says, the single lady who catches the bouquet receives the bride's fortune and will be next in line to marry".

"So how does this help us?", Tuff confusedly thought out loud.

"We get to watch a bunch of ladies basically fight over who will have the best wedding when they get married".

"Ooo, I can't wait then", he smirked.

The single Viking women were trying to contain themselves as Serenity

lined up in front of them. She glanced behind her back then sent her bouquet high in the air. Once it was within arm's reach, the bachelorettes attacked each other, fighting to get it. But alas, one girl was able to firmly push back the frenzy females. She yelled in victory, raising the bouquet up high and proud, for everyone to see. Once they realized that it was Astrid who caught it, they all laughed and turned to Hiccup, who was blushing fiercely. The whole crowd cried out in celebration, knowing soon that Hiccup would have to marry Astrid. And if he didn't, Astrid would surely beat him senseless until he did!

THE END

I finally did it! I finished my first fanfiction. Please leave a review and tell me how I did. I would love to hear from my readers. Any improvements, comments, concerns, etc. will be appreciated and read. I will be off for couple of weeks as I finalize everything for the *drumroll please*** sequel. You heard right, there will be a sequel! But, if you still want to see Chris and Windwalker in action, I suggest you read Serenity Dragonrider's stories. She is the author that graciously let me use her characters Re, Aurora, Tenor, Serenity, and Draco. She has incorporated my characters in her latest three stories: Surprises, Together We Are One, and Lost & Found. I suggest you read them in that order if you are interested in seeing more of Chris and Windwalker. Thank you all for sticking around. I hope you enjoyed reading it as much as I enjoyed writing it. Goodbye!**

End
file.